

[04/14, 12:42] Ron: SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Written by : Precious Moloji

Published by : Visionary Writings

[Click here for more authors](#)

RATINGS

Introduction

My name is Funeka Mahlangu. I am 22 Years old and i live in Pretoria.. I am the only child to my parents, and i live with my Father.

I used to live with my mother full time, but then she met her Untimely death when i was 12 then i had to move in with my Father because i didn't know any surviving relatives from my mother's side other than her big sister who passed on before my Mother..

My Mother is Sotho her surname is Legae and my Father is a Ndebele, after my mother's Death my Father changed my surname from Legae to his..

My father's family hates me alot especially his mother. They say that My mother played my father she was a hoe and they don't believe that i am my Father's daughter because i am light and they have a dark complexion. They say i look nothing like my father..

That pains me alot because my Father's health is not good, he had to resign from work because of his heart condition but the Company he worked for agreed to pay him monthly a salary of 10 000 for 3 Years because he has worked for them for a very long time..

That money is nothing to us, because half of it goes to his medical bills. My father constantly has to go to the Doctor..

When i finished matric i had to look for a job, as my father didn't have money to send me to university or a college so i had to find a job and i work at Pick n pay..

It's not a job that pays alot especially because I'm part time, I earn R2000 a month but it helps me with alot of staff that i need..

I live in fear everyday, that what if my Father dies, what's gonna become of me? More especially because his Family put it out to me that they only Tolerating me because of my Father and that when he passes on that would be the end of me, they even gonna put me out of the house..

You will learn more about me as we go on with my story..

I AM FUNEKA MAHLANGU, AND MY STORY BEGINS HERE. I HOPE YOU WILL ENJOY IT.

Based on real life events, and inspired by

NEVER FORGIVE, NEVER FORGET

[04/14, 12:43] Ron: PART 1 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

My father has a prosthetic heart valve where his Tricuspid was.. What happened is that it got diseased and that led to him to almost getting a heart attack, so to save his life an Open heart surgery was done to remove the diseased Tricuspid and replaced it with an Artificial/Prosthetic heart valve..

My father is always at the risk of having heart failure, or one of his heart valves Elapsing too so i always make sure that we prevent such from happening...

I bought him that sequel pill container that's written Mon-Sun it always reminds him to take his pills..

I have to take extra care of him, after all his the only person i Have in this world and if something could happen to him i don't know what's gonna become of me..

So there i was at work Monday morning. I was hitting the 7:00-14:00 shift.. I was standing close to the stove hitting up chips when i heard someone clapping their hands next to my ear.. I almost jumped, i do not like that at all.

I looked at my right side and it was my ever irritating Colleague Ntsako

Her: Are you alright girl?

Me: I'm fine

Her: Are the chips ready?

Me: i believe so..

I took them out, and went to pour them on that Brown and white disposable paper that was on the counter..

It was pocket chips, and i looked at the receipt the customer had requested Salt, spice, and mustard.. To my surprise i found myself pouring Vinegar..

Me: Shoot!!

I didn't notice that my Manager was looking at me, he was standing behind the counter..

Him: That's coming out of your pay!

Me: i figured that out!!

I knew he was just pulling my leg.. See in this franchise we are all family, we look out for each other at all times. It's not a fancy place to work at, but it's always welcoming..

Ntsako: Why don't you just call out the orders, I'll do the chips

Me: Thank you

It's not like me to be sloppy at work and do careless mistakes. Today was definitely not one of my best days..

I was very worried about my father. He was coughing the whole night yesterday, and today he was still in bed when i left which is soo unlike him because his always awake when i leave for work..

On today's shift. It was me, Ntsako, and our colleague Japhta then the manager..

I picked out one packet of chips and called out the order out

Me: Order number 6..

We didn't have much customers as yet, it was 9:00am

The lady came to collect her chips, from that red lipstick and how she was chewing her bubblegum pretty much indicated to me that she's bringing in alot of attitude..

Her: Bona fela, i was waiting for my chips almost the whole day. You really have to do something with this slow service

What is she talking about?? We open the doors at 8:30 and it was 9:00.. She didn't even stand for that long..

I gave her the packet of chips and she opened them right there..

Her: Akere wabona? Tomato sauce what happened to it?

I looked at her..

Me: Konje sisi ucelile ukuthi sifake i Tomato sauce?? (did you request for us to add tomato sauce)

She gave me a death stare, as if like she was ready to murder me..

My manager kgabo intervened..

I don't entertain fights and arguments, but if you come at me with nonsense i will react..

Kgabo: Sorry mam' i will rectify the mistake

He took the chips to Ntsako.. I stood there talking to the inner Me:

“Get a grip on Funi, you need this job”

Kgabo came to me...

Him: Why don't you get some fresh air, walk around town for 30min get something to drink..

Me: Kgabo

Him: i insist

He took out R10 From his pocket and gave it to me..

Me: Fine.. And thank you

I took the money and went.. I went straight to pick n pay at Central walk bought me some Energade then wondered around...

I took out my phone from my Jean pocket and noticed that I had a WhatsApp message from my cousin Portia Aka Jozi...

Jozi and i we very tight, my mother and her mother are sisters.. Her mother passed on first before my Mother, she's practically the only surviving relative from my mom's family that i have..

Unlike me Jozi lives a very fancy life, she works at Absa bank, married to a guy whose a stock broker. They have a town house at Centurion..

I wish i had her life, the only thing she worries about is what she's gonna wear today..

Jozi never knew her father, she doesn't know her Father's family so basically she has me as her only relative because our mother's died and we don't know that part of our family.. I read the WhatsApp message and it read:

“Drinks tonight at Zanzu”

Jozi likes having fun, she's free spirited she just enjoys life to the fullest..

Her husband let's her do anything that she wants he worships her sometimes I think that his whipped...

Jozi never finished school, she dropped out in grade 10, then went to some college to do a short course in accounting she did from level 2-4 and now here she is working at the bank..

I'm suspecting her husband got her that Job, because he has alot of connections...

Another part of me doesn't truly believe that Jozi's husband is a stock broker that guy looks weird has tattoos all over and he hardly goes to work, I'm suspecting his in some criminal activities but hey, that's none of my Tuck Shop..

I don't know if I'm gonna be able to do drinks tonight, i mean i cannot be going out with my Father sick i need to be there incase He wants me to do something for him..

After that cruising around, i went back to work and continued working.. I had to leave whatever problem i had at the door, because we deal with difficult customers here and i don't wanna be messing up...

We don't get lunch, you eat while you working...

I was happy that tomorrow i won't be coming to work, I'll be off until Thursday....

Finally 14:00 Hit the clock and i was happy, i was very happy to be going home..

We did our last orders and then went to take off our Aprons and hats.. My colleagues who were gonna Hit the 14:00-21:00 took over...

As i was walking to the door kgabo pulled me over...

Him: I hope Thursday you'll come back feeling better

Me: Definitely, and I'm very sorry about Today

Him: Its fine you forgiven

Ntsako and i we made our way to the taxis, we both live ko Sosha..

She took out a cigarette and started smoking

Her: What happened to you today?

Me: i was just worried about my father, when i left him he was not in a good state

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Its okay

Her: Want a smoke?

Me: Don't trip like that..

I don't smoke, but i drink like a fish.. I resort to alcohol as the only option that helps me to suppress my depression..

Yes i was diagnosed with severe clinical depression, i was put on antidepressants a few years ago but i stopped taking them and considered alcohol..

Quite frankly i used to hate Alcohol and seeing my mom drunk everyday when i was young, made me to hate Alcohol even more..

But it's amazing how life can surprise you because now, alcohol has become my world..

We got to the taxi, hopped In and it got full in no time then we went.

I arrived at home, curtains were closed it was a bit dark but i heard the Tv playing..

I went to the lounge, my father was watching soccer..

Seeing him sitting on that couch made me to ease up..

Me: After Dad

He looked at me

Him: Dodo you back from work

Dodo is what he calls me, my father loves me more than anything in the world.. I remember when he told his mother that and she hated Me even more..

Him: Jozi was here you've just missed her

Me: Ain't she at work?

Him: Lunch break

I sat down on the couch

Me: She wants us to go out tonight

Him: I'm guessing you not for that

Me: if i go who is gonna look after you, i think it's best we just buy alcohol and drink here

Him: So you can make Noise for me? I think it's best you go out

My father has always spoiled me.. He has never said no to me..

Me: Are you sure about that?

Him: Yes, i am feeling much better today the new treatment is working wonders I'll even cook

Me: Okay then I'll just text her

I took out my phone and text her on WhatsApp

Me: "It's on Fam"

The last time i drank was last weekend, i really need a fix of alcohol right now..

[04/14, 12:44] Ron: PART 2 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

My cousin Jozi came to fetch me a bit later. I made sure that my Father has everything he wanted before i left.. He did cook, pap and chicken stew, my father Is a good cook that Jozi had

some before we left.

When she was done eating, we walked out to her car and drove to Zanzu..

She's driving The latest Qashqai..

Her: So are you ready for tonight?

Me: I think so

Her: How are you doing?

Me: I'm getting there, and my father is getting there too

Her: That's good to hear.. You know Zuko doesn't close his mouth about you

Zuko is a friend of Jozi's husband, his very rich and Jozi has been hinting that i should go out with him and all that,but I'm not one of those girls..

Her: You need a person to take care of you Funi.

Me: I'll take care of myself

We got to Zanzu and it was a bit quiet and boring, I'm not complaining though because it's a Monday.. We got us some cocktails then went to sit on the couch.. Jozi was busy checking her phone, it was as if like she was waiting for a call..

Me: Waiting for a call?

Her: Hmmm?

Me: You constantly checking your phone

Her: Ohw No, it's just that.. I'm just

I then saw Zuko and Jozi's husband walking in, that's just great!

Jozi: Here they are

She stood up and hugged her hubby then kissed him

Jozi: Nice of you guys to join us

They sat down.. Zuko is very handsome and his a classic man i haven't seen him without a suit.

Jozi's husband Zakes looked at Jozi

Him: Let's go get us some more drinks

Jozi: Uhm Ofcause.

They stood up..

Zakes: What should i get you Ntwana?

Zuko: sprite and Lime would just do

Zakes: Coming right up

They both went to the bar to get drinks..

There was some awkward silence between Zuko and myself, I didn't know what to say and so did he..

Him: So how are you?

Me: I'm good, and you?

Him: I'm fine thank you

Me: So you don't drink?

Him: No.

Me: That's weird..

Him: i used to drink alot back then until something tragic happened then i had to quit alcohol

Eyy yona yintle lendonda yomXhosa (this Xhosa guy is good looking)

Me: if you don't mind me asking what happened?

Him: I'd rather not talk about it now

He gave me a side smile, he was charming..

Jozi and Zakes came back with drinks.. Jozi and i we were drinking Hunter's Gold, Zakes was drinking Windhoek and Zuko was drinking Sprite with lime..

We chilled, drank, and talked.. It was a nice and slow evening. I would steal looks at him when he wasn't Looking, he was just a definition of a hot man.....

I was getting a bit sloshed, i like being sloshed just a good feeling that relaxes me..

Zuko kept on checking his wrist watch, i only noticed later it's a Samsung smart watch..

Him: I'm sorry guys i have to go.

Me: wife waiting for you at home?

He chuckled.

Him: No, my babysitter wants to go home it's already late

He gulped down his Sprite then stood up.

Him: Was nice chilling with you guys, hoping will do this again

Me: You hardly even had fun, you were drinking Sprite all night..

I rolled my eyes, that's what alcohol does to me it gives me confidence...

He looked at me with those sexy eyes, as if like his gonna say "Come home with me, so we can fuck all night"

Jozi: Was nice chilling with you too Zuko

Zakes: Wait for me, i need to call it a night too have alot of work paperwork to do

He also stood up..

Him: Funi was nice seeing you again

He then looked at Jozi

Him: I'll see you later

We bid them farewell, and they went..

Jozi looked at me..

Her: and then?

Me: What?

Her: i saw how you were with Mr Mqela

Me: Mr Mqela

Her: luzuko Mqela

I drank my Hunter's..

Me: i don't know what you talking about

Her: You like him don't you?

Me: What? Ofcause not.. Don't be silly

I sipped on my Hunter's Gold while she looked at me..

Me: Okay fine, i do like him

Her: i knew it!!

Me: He is soo sexy..

Her: and so single

Me: Don't play with me, that guy cannot be single

Her: He was Married but his wife passed on from a tragic car accident. She was pregnant at that time, Miraculously they saved the baby but unfortunately they couldn't save her..

Me: That's sad what happened?

Her: He drove straight into a truck, i heard he was drunk.. That's why he stopped drinking..

Me: That's very sad hey, truly sad

Later that night, Jozi drove me home.. She wasn't as drunk as i am. I really had a good time with her and i hope we can do it again, especially if Mr Luzuko is gonna be invited..

I unlocked the door then went inside, figured out that my Father would be asleep but he wasn't..

Me: i thought you'll be sleeping

Him: Can't sleep while you out there

Me: Sorry that i came home late

Him: At least you safe

He looked a bit distracted...

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: Grandma is coming to visit tomorrow

There we go, i might as well just go out every night and drink

PART 2 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 12:45] Ron: PART 3 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I woke up the following day, i was hungover.. I didn't feel like eating anything or doing anything i just felt like drinking water..

My father showed up, he was well dressed as if like he was going somewhere..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning dad

Him: hangover?

Me: a terrible one

Him: Drink strong coffee

Me: So where are you off too?

Him: I have a Doctor's appointment then after I'll fetch Grandma from the bus stop

I stood up and made myself coffee..

Him: Dodo i know how much this is hard for you

Me: She never bothered to visit, why now?

Him: i felt like it would be better to have someone help you around the house.. Let's be honest you are still young you need to live your life you cannot be always here taking care of me..

I turned around and looked at him, while boiling water

Me: i don't mind taking care of you

Him: You are young, you need to live your life

He took his car keys, he still has that very very Old Mercedes-Benz

Me: You not gonna eat breakfast?

Him: I'll eat on the way.. See you when i get back

Me: Okay

He walked out.. I wasn't Looking forward to my Grandma's visit at all..

I drank my coffee, then two glasses of water and went to sleep again.

I woke up a bit later, cleaned the house so i don't give my Grandma any reason to complain..

When i was done, i bathe then watched Tv..

I was very bored, so later in the afternoon i decided to go to town just do some window shopping and then visit Jozi at work.

Jozi met up with me at Church square on her lunch break

Her: So how are you?

Me: I'm okay.. Just that Grans is coming

Her: That Dragon lady

Me: I'm not looking forward to her visit

Her: Come visit me and Zakes for a while

Me: Can't leave my father alone

Her: He will have his mother to take care of him in the meantime

Me: Naa I'll be fine....heard from Zuko?

She shook her head no..

Her: We don't keep in touch, i only see him when he comes to visit Zakes

Zuko is a person worth Knowing, and i feel like i should know him..

After chilling with Jozi, i decided to pass by at with chilled a bit then later on i went back home..

As soon as i opened the kitchen door, i was welcomed by some nice smell.. Someone was definitely preparing a delicious meal..

My Grandma was at the kitchen cooking..

I closed the door, i didn't know what to say to her it's not very easy to communicate with her..

I cleared my throat, she turned around and looked at me..

Me: Good evening Grandma

It was around 17:00

She looked at me, then ignored me and continued cooking..

I didn't entertain her that much i went straight to my bedroom and laid on my bed with tears falling..

Why me? Why is this happening to me? What did i do to this woman for her to hate me so so much..

I wish my mother was here or i wish that i knew her family, then i would move out and go to live with them.....

At around 19:00 my Father came to get me, telling me that Dinner is ready..

The walk from my room to the lounge was long, it was the longest walk of my life.

I got there and my plate was on the coffee table already, it was chicken Curry and some dumpling..

I took it and sat down..

Grans: So Samson next week Saturday there's some ceremony that we doing at your Aunt's place i would really like it if you would come..

Him: We will come

Grans: You and who?

Him: Me and Funi

Her: I'm sorry but it's a Family thing..

There we go..

Dad: Mom please

Her: Samson i don't wanna hear it, it's a big day for your Niece Lungile she's going to Varsity and she's a Virgin.. We don't want fights we just wanna celebrate in peace

Dad: When are you gonna accept that Funi is my daughter

Her: Funi is not your Daughter!!! Her mom was busy sleeping around so umkhondo kababawaka Funi asiwazi (we don't know Where Funi's Father is)

Dad: Ma.

Grans: Samson this child must go and look for her father and know where she comes from.. If you die we don't what's gonna happen to her!

I couldn't tolerate this, i stood up and started walking out..

Dad: Dodo!

Grans: Myeke (leave her)

I opened the kitchen door and banged it on my way out...

I have tolerated this woman long enough and I'm just tired of her now..

PART 3 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAW

[04/14, 12:46] Ron: PART 4 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I went back home and called Jozi to come and fetch me..

As much as my father loves me, but he also loves his mother and i can't make him choose between us, so i think it's best i go live with Jozi for a while..

I had packed my things, my father didn't like the idea of me moving out but hey, there's only a

limit to what a human being can take..

I don't want my Grandma and her family being the reason why i commit Suicide..

Jozi fetched me after an hour, then we drove to her house..

I was very quiet in the car and thinking of what I'm gonna do next.. I can't really stay with Jozi for that long because you know how it is having another female moving into your house can create alot of problems..

Jozi's house is big and beautiful, this girl was blessed..

Her: Should i dish up for you?

Me: No thank you

Her: You have to eat my darling..

Me: Fine then

We first went to put my bag in the guest room, i liked it because it had Tv.. I just love lazing around all day when I'm off and watch Reality shows on Tv... I like the E channel i get to watch keeping up with the kardashians, i am Cait, and all that..

We then went to the kitchen..

Her: i haven't cooked

Me: So what were you gonna dish up for me?

Her: Aii Tsek! I'll just put chops in the oven

I laughed..

At the top she had different kinds of whiskies, she had a shelf that had wines and a mini bar fridge that had beers..

I got me Some Saint wine and drank while she was busy cooking...

She was doing chops, Bistro gravy, some spinach with cream and pap..

My cousin was a good cook.

The door opened as we were busy talking, Zakes and Zuko walked in..

Zuko was wearing a Jean, with a tshirt and sneakers.

Was my first time seeing him without a suit..

Luzuko is just soo yummy, his perfect, his hot, yazini his a definition of a hot man..

Zakes looked a bit surprised to see me..

Him: Funi??

Jozi: Ohw ya Honey.. Uhm Funi will be staying with us for a while, she's having some problems at home i hope you don't mind

He kissed her on her cheek..

Him: i think so.. Something smells good

Her: Ohw ya i cooked your favourite chops

Him: That's good

Jozi: Hey Zuko

Zuko: Hi Jozi

Jozi: i hope you still remember my Cousin Funi

He looked at me..

Him: i still remember her..

Zakes: I'll go and freshen up then..

Jozi: and I'll go and set up the table..

They both left, leaving me and Zuko alone

He was tapping the table, and i was holding my wine glass close to my mouth..

Him: Saint wine

I put the Glass on the table..

Me: Yeap.. Good wine

Him: it is indeed

Me: Once drank it?

He cleared his throat..

Him: Uhm No my... It was my.. I just know it

Me: Oookay

This is very Awkward..

Me: Your Nanny is going to sleep over?

Him: Pardon?

Me: The last time you left early because you had to relieve your Nanny

Him: Ohh Yes.. My son is with my mom

Me: How old is he?

Him: 6 months

He took out his flashy phone and showed me his pictures

Me: Wow his very cute, what is his name?

Him: Aphiwe Mqela

Me: His cute, his gonna break alot of hearts when he grows up

He Chuckled

Him: i hope not

I could see from the clothes he was wearing, to his gadgets that this guy is damn rich!!

Me: Uhm what is it that you do again?

The wine was kicking in

Him: CEO and founder of MQ, we make games for Xbox and Playstation. We also have a few Apps on playstore

Me: So you a game developer

He laughed

Him: I am a software Developer

Me: Interesting.. So what are the Famous games that you inverted?

Him: i was fortunate to work overseas for a few years, i was part of the invention of GTA 5,i worked under Google too creating Apps for them..

Me: Why did you leave?

Him: Too much politics..

Me: Heard GTA Is a good game

Him: Have you played it before?

Me: No

Him: You should

Me: maybe you can teach me

Him: Maybe i will

We looked at each other, Gosh this guy is making my knees weak.. Those lips, those eyes, that perfect chin..

Our moment of gazing in each other's eyes was short lived when Jozi walked in..

Her: i hope my pots didn't burn

She went to check on her pots

I drank my wine.. After checking the pots she looked at us..

Her: Did i interrupt something?

Me: No you didn't

Zuko: Can i please go and watch the game

Jozi: forgot that Bayern Munich is playing tonight

Him: Yes and i can't miss it..

He said that while walking to the lounge, he had Brackets he was just perfect yazini.. Jozi and i looked at each other.

Me: Awe ma!! He is hot

Jozi: i know hey, if i didn't have Zakes

Me: Hot and rich that's a rare combination to get

Jozi: That's a potential husband right there

Jozi was tight, he is a potential husband..

PART 4 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 12:48] Ron: PART 5 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We had a nice dinner.. Chops, with Gravy&Spinach then pap. My cousin is the best when it comes to cooking, i remember when she wanted to have catering company kodwa the Absa job seemed more advantageous..

Zakes: Babe that meal was delicious thank you my love.

Jozi smiled at him

Jozi: i know how much you like your chops...

Zuko: Thank you Jozi it was a good meal

Jozi stood up...

Her: Cup of coffee? Anyone?

Zuko: Not for me, i think I'll call it s night..

Me: I'll help you clear the table Jozi

Jozi: No you done, i think you should go and sleep

Me: I'm still fine..

I stood up and helped her clear the dishes

Zakes: Come on Zuko i thought we were gonna have a night cap

Zuko: I'm sure my boy misses me man, i gotta bounce..

Zakes: One drink

Zuko brushed his face with his hands..

Him: Fine I'll have one cup of coffee

Jozi: I'll make it for you

Zuko: Thank you

We cleared the table, then Jozi made Zuko a cup of coffee..

Jozi: You can take it to him

Me: Me?

Her: You want him to notice you don't you?

Me: Fine

I took the tray to him, they were watching soccer

Me: Here's your coffee

Him: Ohh i thought Jozi was gonna bring it, but thank you anyway

I went back to the kitchen..

Jozi: and?

Me: He expected you to bring it

I sat down and drank wine again..

Jozi: Hai cousin i am starting to get concerned about the way you drinking

Me: i just like how alcohol relaxes me

Jozi: As long as you know that alcohol won't do away with your problems

Me: i know that..

Jozi and i chilled at the kitchen, she was drinking lemon juice and i was drinking wine.. It was really getting to me..

Zuko came into the kitchen with Zakes, they were laughing

Zakes: It was a good game

Zuko: I trust real Madrid..

Jozi: When you guys are happy like this.. Means your team has won

Zuko: You know that

Zakes phone rang, he took it out and checked. He then had a smile on his face

Zakes: I have to take this excuse me

He went out.. Jozi looked at him.

Zuko: ladies i have to go, Jozi thank you for the dinner

Jozi was concentrating on Zakes who was not that far from us.. He was laughing and smiling whoever he was talking too on the other line, surely was tickling him..

Zuko started walking to the door...

Me: uhm wait for me, i need to take the trash out

He waited. I stood up from the chair, i almost fell i was tripping on chairs..

Zuko: You know what maybe i should take the trash on my way out

Me: i think i need some fresh air

I looked at Jozi and Zakes

Me: I'm sensing a fight coming

Him: Okay then come

He held my hand and we walked out..

We put the trash in the dumbstar and then we went to chill on the pavement..

Him: So how did it come about for a beautiful girl like you to drink this much?

Ohhh he thinks I'm beautiful..

Me: i just like drinking

Him: There's a fine line between drinking for fun, and drinking because of an underlying problem

Me: What are you now, a shrink?

He chuckled

Him: No but I've been down this road before

Me: Well i just love drinking that's all

Him: if you say so then

There was some awkward silence..

Me: i.. My mom died when i was 12 then after i had to go and live with my Father..

Him: Was that a bad thing?

Me: No, my father adores me. Problem is his family doesn't like me at all. They always telling him that I'm not his daughter my mother cheated on him..

Him: And what does he say?

Me: Well he believes that I'm his daughter, but that's not gonna help because when he dies they gonna kick me out of the house..

Him: Are you working or studying?

Me: Working but i don't make enough money

Him: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: Its okay, I've always known that I'm destined for tragedy

Him: i don't believe in that statement.

Me: Well i do because my father is..

He looked at me..

Me: You know what, i don't like talking about this

Him: So that's why you choose drinking other than talking about it

Me: i thought i said i don't wanna talk about it

Him: Then drink your tragedy away

I looked at him, i didn't believe he said that

Him: Look I'm sorry that all of this is happening to you but I'm not gonna sit here and feel sorry for you, you need to stop playing the victim

Me: Excuse me? Have you walked in my shoes?

Him: We all have a ghetto painful story to tell

Me: You know what, you are a jerk!! No wonder why you single no woman is gonna love you!

He laughed...

Him: i think that's my queue to leave

He stood up and dusted himself...

Him: Gonna need help to go back to the house?

Me: I'll find my way

He smiled at Me

Him: Ayt..

He then walked up to his Bentley i was still sitting there looking at him.

PART 5 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 12:49] Ron: PART 6 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I went back to the house, it was a bit quiet figured that Zakes and Jozi must've had an Early night..

I decided to finish my wine, or what was left and went to bed....

It didn't take me that long to fall asleep, before i knew it i was in lala-land..

I woke up at 00:00am i was a bit hungover so i made my way to the kitchen to drink water.. I was

always advised to drink water after drinking to prevent a hangover..

As i made my way to the kitchen, i heard someone busy sniffing..

I switched on the light and i was surprised to see Jozi sitting there..

She was drinking coffee i assume because she was holding a mug.

Me: Jozi?

I went to sit down opposite her..

Me: What happened?

She blew on the tissue.

Her: it never gets better

Me: What doesn't get better?

Her: Zakes is cheating on me, he always has been

That was shocking, i mean i looked at Jozi and thought that she had the best of life..

Me: What??

I hate men who cheat. I was deeply hurt my my high school ex bf, after breaking my Virginity he made a run for it..

Me: i thought you were happy, i thought he loves you

Her: He does but.. His a man he can't resist temptation

Me: How many women?

Her: i just know 2..

Me: You don't need to put up with this Jozi. Just because he buys you Gucci bags, expensive clothes and cars doesn't give him the right to hurt you like this..

Her: Its amazing how much a wife has to put up with.

Me: Where is he now?

She shrugged her shoulders...

Jozi: He said he needed some fresh air after our argument so he left

Me: That bastard!!

Her: Let me go to bed, Tomorrow I'm going to work

She stood up..

Her: Are you going to work tomorrow? Are you gonna need a lift?

Me: Yes please

Her: Okay

She took her tissues and the mug then went upstairs.. I stood up and got me Some water...

I cannot believe that he would do such to Jozi. I mean Jozi is a beautiful woman, she has a great body there is nothing that she lacks..

After drinking water, i went back to bed then slept..

I woke up the following morning, and prepared for work.. I was hitting the 7:00-14:00 shift..

When i was done, i ate breakfast then Jozi and i left for work...

She dropped me at my work place then i went inside.. When we get to work we required to clean, fill up the sauces and peel the potatoes...

Today i was working with My friend Ntsako then the manager..

Ntsako was moping while i was peeling potatoes and our manager was filling up the sauces..

Me: We gonna be required to do a lot of work today since we short staffed..

There was no reply. I looked at Ntsako she wasn't her normal she looked distracted..

Me: Hey what's wrong?

She looked at me

Her: What?

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I'm just stressed

Ntsako lives with her bf who doesn't work, they renting a room at Sosha.. She's a breadwinner they survive on her small salary...

Ntsako: Thabiso and i we don't have money to buy food.. Just think of when we gonna get paid? We have 3 weeks left before we get paid

Me: I'm sorry girl

I've always told myself that i will never date a broke guy, I mean look at the stress that they bring.. Ntsako is hardly happy this is weighing on her..

Me: Ntsako i always told you

Her: if you can't help me then please don't judge me. Thabiso and i we have been through alot together and we got through alot together..

I mean when someone talks like that there's nothing you can say..

Haike the day went by and we worked silently, everyone was doing what they were supposed to do no one said nothing to no one unless it was Necessary...

Our manager had gone to shoprite to get something and i was holding the font for him...

I find working at the till much better and much nicer...

I was standing there counting cash, when i heard a familiar voice..

Voice: Good day

I hope it's not who i think it is, i looked up and damn it was who i thought it was.. It was Zuko.

This is a very embarrassing moment, the last thing i wanted him to find out was that i slave around all day frying potatoes..

I looked at him, after the stunt he pulled yesterday i don't care....

Me: Can i take your order please?

Him: i was hoping that we can talk.

He was in that flashy suit of his...

Me: I'm working

Him: i can see that

Me: Then order or leave me alone

He sent out a silly giggle then looked down, after a few seconds he looked at me again

Him: i would like to order 15 packet of chips and I'm talking about the large ones.. Put everything except for Vinegar. Can i also 20 of your Russians, i also want 25 pocket size chips. On 5 of them put salt and spice.. On 7 of them put salt, spice, and mustard..

I looked at him.

Me: Zuko

Him: Am i going to fast?

Me: Fine we can talk

Him: Thought you said you at work, and I'm being a potential customer..

He had a smirk on his face, he was really enjoying this..

Him: Am i gonna get my order or should i speak to the manager?

Me: Why you trying to act fresh?

Him: Why you being childish?

Me: What do you want Zuko?

Him: i don't know hey, since you can't really deliver on my order i have something in mind

I looked at him..

Him: Dinner tonight at my place

Me: Keep on dreaming

Him: Then I'll dream my way to your manager..

Me: Whatever

Him: You think I'm bluffing?

He wasn't bluffing, he looked serious

Me: How did you find me?

Him: believe me with a cousin like Jozi it wasn't really difficult..

I'm gonna kill Jozi i swear

Me: Fine I'll come to your stupid dinner! Are you happy now?

I smiled at him, wasn't a friendly smile was a sarcastic one..

Him: I'm ecstatic.. Now can i please have medium chips, with a large Russian, and a..

He looked at me for a while

Him: think a coke..

Me: What would you like in your chips?

Him: What do you recommend?

Me: i don't know what you'll like

Him: Anything you put I'm sure I'm gonna like it

I put everything..

I prepared his order while he was on his tab waiting for his order

Ntsako: Is that Luzuko Mqela?(Whispering)

Me: The one and only

Her: What is he doing here? This is no place for him his better off eating at a 5 Star hotel

He looked at us, think he noticed that we were talking about him.. Then after he went back to his tab..

After finishing with his order i put everything in a plastic...

Me: Here's your order sir..

He came closer..

Him: I'll pick you up at 19:00

He then started walking away

Me: Excuse me what about your order?

Him: I bought it for you, Enjoy

He gave me a side smile and Walked out

Ntsako: Lord have mercy.. That man's charm is lethal..

PART 6 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 12:53] Ron: PART 7 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Ntsako jumped on those chips and Russian. I let her help herself to them, she was having it hard at the moment she needed the chips more than me..

I worked throughout my shift while thinking about Zuko, he was charming, he was intoxicating, he makes my knees weak. No guy has made me feel like that since my useless ex bf in high school who hit it then ran away..

When i was done with my shift at 14:00,i left. I had to take a cab because Jozi was still at work..

I got home, and i was nervous about tonight, what am i going to wear? Where is Zuko taking me?

Well seeing how much of a classic man he is, he probably gonna take me to a fancy restaurant....

I spent the whole afternoon trying to choose an appropriate dress and i found one. Was a black

short dress i was gonna wear it with my black heels..

I'm not a person who likes weaves i always have box braids..

At 16:00 i took a long bath, i just relaxed while i day dreamed about the perfect night I'm gonna have with Zuko. He was just perfect and at the same time i was scared. Guys like him are usually bastards his just too good to be true..

When the water was getting cold, i got out and went to dress up...

I haven't worn my dress in a while now, so it was very tight. I am a big girl, I'm size 36 i just have thick thighs and Curves...

My mom's family we were all blessed with beautiful bodies, i mean look at Jozi.....

At least my heels still fit because i don't wear much of heels that much...

Jozi came back at 18:00,i was wondering where she was because she knocks off at 16:00..

She was surprised to see me in that outfit..

Her: And then? Siyaphi sowu sexy so?

Me: I'm going out

Her: Why wasn't i informed? I could've came back early

Me: I'm not going with you unfortunately

Her: O tsamaya le mang? (who are you going with)

Me: Well Zuko is taking me out

Her: Say what?

I know Jozi would make a big deal out of this

Jozi: Keng la jola nah? (Are you guys dating)

Me: No we going out as friends

Jozi: Hai i don't know about that, especially since you in that dress

Me: Hai Jozi don't start

Her: Fine i won't Annoy

She looked at me

Me: What?

Her: No make up nyanga ge? Gape you look very simple

Me: You know i don't like make up

Her: Aowa come yellow bone i will titivate you nyana

We went to her bedroom and she sat me on that small chair that's part of her dressing table..

Her: Don't break my chair with your big thighs and Ass

Me: Look whose talking

Jozi's make up looks very expensive, Ohw well it is my cousin is very expensive..

She even went as far as giving me her clutch bag..

She had also had tied my braids into a neat bun..

She borrowed me her big hoop black earrings..

After all of that she looked at me and started whistling..

Her: if only i was a guy

Me: mxm you trying to make me feel better

Her: You look very beautiful cousin i don't wanna lie

I smiled

Me: Thank you

I just hope that Zuko is going to like all of this..

It was around 18:30 now, we went to the kitchen and chilled there she was about to start cooking..

The door opened and Zakes walked in.. He had a bandage wrapped around his arm.. His eyes froze when he saw me..

Him: Funi is that you?

Me: Uhm Yes

Him: Wow i didn't know that you can dress up

Me: i have my days

Him: Going somewhere?

Me: Yes Zuko is taking me out

Him: i didn't know that you guys were hooking up?

Me: We going out as friends

Him: That's good then

He looked at Jozi, i could see the tension between them..

Him: i thought we were gonna eat out tonight

Jozi: i just feel like having a home cooked meal

Zakes: Just trying to do something nice for you

Jozi was getting fired up, judging from how she was chopping those carrots

Her: I didn't ask you to be nice

He didn't say anything he walked away..

I was waiting for Zuko to come and rescue me, the atmosphere wasn't welcoming....

The door bell rang

Jozi: I'll get it

She went to open and Zuko walked in. To my surprise he was wearing blue cabri jeans, black chuck tailors, and a black Versace tshirt and a Versace cap.. He topped the outfit with a silver icon necklace, he looked fresh.. I stood up

He looked at me and whistled a little, he was drooling..

Him: You look sexy As fuck

He said that very low..

Me: Excuse me

Him: Sorry you look... You killed the outfit

Me: Thank you uhm you don't look dressed up

Him: Well we gonna meet with a couple of friends at some pub and grill

Jozi laughed..

Me: Gosh i feel stupid right now

I walked away, he gently grabbed my arm

Him: Yintoni ngoku? (what's wrong now)

Me: Well i thought we..

Jozi: going to a restaurant

Zuko: Ohh eish I'm sorry i should've told you

Me: Ya..

Him: jonga ne, why don't you just change the shoes because i really like your dress

He looked at me from head to toe when he got to my lower body he bit his lower lip...

Me: Fine I'll go Change the shoes

I went to change the heels and wore gladiator sandals....

I went back to him then we walked out... He was driving an Orange BMW M5..

He opened the door for me and i went inside..

He went to driver's seat then drove..

Before i knew it we were in some hood that i really didn't know. I never knew that Zuko was hood..

I didn't really the neighbourhood I'm thinking it's dangerous especially because there's those hood rats that are wearing ama short with bras etc holding ama Savannah nje it was a mess..

He parked by the gate, there was alot of flashy cars it looked like a dope pub and grill..

We got out of the car, and there was some guy waiting for us at the gate....

Zuko: remza

Remza: Zik Zat

Zuko: Don't start broe

He gave him a handshake..

This guy looked at me

Zuko: Ohh this Funi, and Funi meet my best friend Remza

Remza: How are you?

Me: Fine thank you

He looked at me, made me uncomfortable..

Zuko: We can go inside

Remza: Y..ya Ofcause

We walked inside Zuko was holding my hand.. This Remza guy wasn't bad looking and he looked successful too just like Zuko....

PART 7 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAW

[04/14, 12:54] Ron: PART 8 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

The pub&grill wasn't as bad as i thought. The music was nice, the atmosphere was welcoming there was a couple of rich guys with their gfs, there was Blessers it was just a fun place to be at..

We got a table, Zuko got himself Appletisers, Remza got Heineken. And i got ama Red Square at least i don't get drunk quickly off that...

Zuko: Are you okay?

Me: Yes I'm fine

They were playing old school kwaito.....

They started talking about soccer i was getting a bit bored, i took out my phone and went on Facebook..

After a couple of minutes, Remza decided to leave.

Remza: Nice meeting you again Funi

Me: Same here

He took his car keys and phone then left..

Zuko: I'm sorry about that if it seemed as if like i was ignoring you

I put my phone away..

Me: Its okay

Him: Just that i haven't seen him for a while

Me: i understand

He looked at me for a while, he was making me blush

Me: What?

Him: You very beautiful

I smiled

Me: Thank you

Our eyes locked as we were looking at each other..

He leaned closer, i don't know what possessed me but i let him kiss me..

His lips were a bit cold, figured could be the Appletisers he been drinking because they looked very cold....

It was a long smooth kiss, things were escalating his cold hand was running on thighs already.. I broke the kiss..

We were still close to each other, at that moment it felt like the whole room didn't exist was just me and him..

Him: I'm sorry if i made you uncomfortable

Me: Its fine I'm sorry too

He removed his hand and we continued drinking.

The hardest thing for me was being in a place with a hot guy and girls kept on stealing looks at him..

His phone rang, and he checked it.

Him: Sorry i have to take this

He stood up and Walked out.

I sat there and looked at people who were dancing, some where talking everyone was just minding their own business..

Zuko came back after a few minutes, that call took long..

Me: That call took long

Him: Yeah I'm sorry was my business partner

He was busy sniffing and rubbing his nose

Me: Sinuses?

Him: You can say that

He didn't look like the same Zuko that left a few minutes ago

Him: Need a refill?

Me: Uhm i guess i can have one or two dumpies

Him: I'll be right back

Me: Okay

He stood up and went to the bar to get more alcohol

The dj went from old school kwaito, to hip hop..

Zuko came back with Red Square dumpies and a glass of whiskey...

He gave me the dumpies and then gulped down the whiskey, was shocking because he said he don't drink

Me: i thought you don't drink

Him: i don't, but i can't let you drink alone

Me: Ohw

He was still sniffing and rubbing his nose

Me: Are you sure you alright?

Him: I'm good

His eyes lied, he looked high..

He looked at his wrist watch..

Him: i have an early morning tomorrow

Me: You want us to go?

Him: i think so plus nothing much is happening here

Me: Okay.

I finished my red square and then we went to the car...

I really thought that Zuko and i we were gonna have a nice dinner or something just like the two of us, but he had other plans boring ones for that matter..

We got his car and before we went inside he pulled Me and pinned me against his car..

Where the cars were it was a bit dark you cannot see much of what's going on..

I could smell his breath that was mixed with whiskey, was that kind that could intoxicate you

He came closer, he was breathing heavy on my neck with his hand going up inside my dress..

Him: The only thing that kept on running in my mind was to fucken get you off that dress

Is this gonna be a night one Stand? Is it too early for this..

God please help me resist him...

He kissed me and i didn't stop him, it's like he Has possessed me..

We decided to take the matter further to his car, never in a million years have i imagined being fucked at the backseat of some nigga's car. Ever since my ex did a Hit and Run i have never been intimate with any guy..

I was ontop of him, he was pulling my dress up and squeezing my big thighs. He was caressing my body, he wanted me and i felt myself wanting him too...

We continued kissing until things got really heated up...

The next thing i know, we getting condoms under the seat and reality kicks in at that moment that ima have sex with this guy..

I helped him to lower his pants and Boxers..

I rolled down the condom on him, my underwear is already down..

He held my waist and helped me slide down on him, it was a bit painful considering the fact that i haven't had sex in a while and i wasn't even that wet...

I slowly slid down until i took all of him in, i felt him deep inside..

Me: I don't think i can do this Zuko

He was squeezing my body against his, he was kissing me on my neck..

Him: Come on..

I slowly moved up and down, I'm trying not to scream or cry but the pain is just too intense. I can't get off him, he has a tight grip around my waist.. He is forcefully making me go up and down..

I cannot take the pain anymore I'm crying Zuko is hurting me but he doesn't seem to care, my breath is seizing I'm begging him to stop but he doesn't.

After having his way with me, he just holds on to me while catching his breath..

I get off him, my Womanhood has been Violated, I'm Burning, I'm in excruciating pain I'm sure i even bled..

I'm crying and looking for my underwear,until i found it..

After this i don't think that i wanna see Zuko anymore..

After putting on my underwear i stare out of the window..

Me: Can you drive me home?

Him: Yeah Sure

What kind of Animal is this? His not even gonna apologise?

After fixing himself up he gets out of the car...

Him: Uhm i need to take a piss I'll be right back

Immediately after he went out and closed the door, i let everything out. Never in my life have i been sexually Violated..

PART 8 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 12:56] Ron: PART 9 SAVE ME FRON MY INLAWS

When he dropped me off at the house, i didn't say anything to him i got out of the car and started walking to the house..

I heard him calling me, i think he was following me. After a while, i felt him grabbing my arm..

I turned around and slapped him very hard.

Me: Don't you ever in your filthy life touch me ever again!!!

I walked up to the house. I opened the door and went straight to my bedroom...

I locked the door and cried myself to sleep... Zuko had no right to do what he did to me. Yes i might've led him on and all that but when i cried for him to stop, he should've stopped.. Will i ever trust any guy ever again? Will i even wanna be intimate with any other guy again? Will i ever enjoy having sex?? Those were the questions that kept on playing in my mind over and over again until i eventually fell asleep..

.

.

I woke up late the following day, luckily I was off..

I got out of bed and went to bath, took a long bath...

When i was done, i went and dressed up. I was wearing a denim short with my Lacoste sneakers and a white tshirt..

Today was pay day, my money got in at 00:00 was R2000 exactly..

I decided to go to town and have me a nice breakfast at wimpy...

Maybe later on I'll go and visit my Father, the honest truth is that i miss him alot...

I checked my purse at least i had R30 for taxi fare...

I got to town and went to Wimpy to get me their delicious breakfast..

I was eating all by myself, decided to connect to their WiFi and go on Twitter..

While i was still sitting there busy watching Videos on YouTube i heard some guys laughing and i raised up my head to see what was going on and i saw 2 guys sitting not far from Me they were chatting and laughing think they were waiting for their food..

I put my phone away and concentrated on one of the guys..

He was very hot, pinkish lips, nicely and neatly trimmed facial hair. After seeing Zuko i thought that he was the only hot guy i have ever seen but clearly there's more guys that top him out there..

There is no sin in looking and admiring, Yena he was hot shame i won't lie..

I couldn't spend the whole morning admiring him now, so i stood up and went to pay my bill..

I didn't have cash on me so i swiped.. While I was waiting for the speed point to process everything i decided to take one last look at him before i leave..

Cashier: Sorry mam'

She touched my hand and i looked at her

Her: It says declined

Me: Can we please try again?

Her: Yes we can

She tried again, but it still declined. I hate Capitec sometimes because it does this alot to me.

Me: i have R2000 In my account right now it cannot decline

Cashier: Well you can see for yourself. Don't you have any money on you?

Me: No i don't, i can go and withdraw some cash

Her: i am sorry but i cannot allow you to leave the shop, how do i know you will be back

Me: Excuse me? Do i look like a thief to you?

Her: No but I don't know you and i can't trust you

Me: Let me call someone then.

I tried taking my phone out again from my bag but my bag fell, some of my things were scattered on the floor..

My bag is always full of things, unnecessary things to be Exact..

I exhaled and crouched down to pick up my things...

I saw someone crouching down too, helping me to get my things from the floor.. The smell of that cologne was intoxicating..

Voice: Let me help you with that

I looked up and it was Mr man, smiling at me and helping me out..

He had a cute side smile, this guy was on another level...

I got up from the floor, and so did he.. He handed me my things.

Me: Th...thank you

Him: You welcome

Cashier: Excuse me??

I looked at her

Me: Ohh sorry

I got my phone and called Jozi, but she wasn't picking up. What did i expect though? She's at work..

Me: I'm sorry but the person is not Picking up

Her: Maybe i should call my manager

Guy: If I'm not being too forward can i ask what's going on?

This is an embarrassing situation to explain..

Me: i.. My.. My card declines i can't pay my bill

He reached down to his pocket and took out his wallet.. He took out a R100 note and gave it to the waitresses.

She put it through and gave him the change..

Him: Its okay you can keep it

Cashier: Thank you

Me: That was embarrassing, thank you

Him: Its my pleasure

I started walking to the exit..

Him: Do you have a minute or so?

I stopped then turned back and looked at him..

Him: I'm supposed to meet up with someone but they running late would you please have one drink with me? My friend just left and i don't wanna look like a fool all sitting alone..

I looked at him, he was too cute for me to say no.

Me: Uhm

Him: just one milkshake

Me: Just one?

Him: just one..

We ordered then went to sit down.

Him: I'm keegan by the way

Me: Funi

Him: Nice to meet you Funi

Me: Same here..

The waitress brought our milkshakes to us..

Him: Thank you

Me: Thank you

Him: So Funi are you from around here?

Me: You can say that, and you?

Him: I'm from a small colored hood called Geluksdaal

Me: Let me guess only coloreds reside there?

He chuckled

Her: No there are black people living there.. You haven't been there before?

Me: i don't even know where it is

Him: Maybe one day you should come

Me: Maybe.

His phone rang.. He took it out and answered it..

Him: Hey man.. I'm at wimpy waiting for you.. Ayt cool my Nigga

He then hunged up

Me: Are you even allowed to say the word "Nigga"

Him: Think it's gonna make me sound racist?

Me: i think so

Him: At least no one heard me then

I laughed a little..

Me: Maybe i should go before your friend comes

Him: Don't be insane I'm still enjoying your company

I smiled and looked down..

Him: Look at her all blushing..

He was really making me blush.

Me: I'm not blushing Hau

Him: Call it whatever you wanna call it..

His phone beeped, he checked it.. Then he typed something.

Him: My boy is here

I looked at the door, and i couldn't believe who entered it was Zuko.. Keegan raised up his hand for him to spot him..

Wow!! Did they plan this??

PART 9 SAVE ME FRON MY INLAWS

[04/14, 12:58] Ron: PART 10 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I couldn't believe this at all, i looked down and laughed a little while i was trying to comprehend what was going on...

Keegan: Am i missing something?

Zuko: Uhm (Clears throat).. We already know each other

Keegan: Small world that we live in

I looked at Zuko...

Me: was this planned huh?

Zuko: Funi I've been trying to call you

Me: Why? So you can sexual violate me at the back of your car again?

Keegan: hold up! What's going on?

Zuko: Funi..

I was now boiling i stood up..

Me: so what? You decided to hook up your homies so that all you can gang rape me??? Is that why you buying me a milkshake Keegan??

Keegan: What is she Talking about Zuk?

I stood up and took my bag then started walking away, Zuko grabbed my arm. I turned around and slapped him...

Me: Don't ever touch me!!

I clicked my tongue and Walked out..

How can i be such a fool? Why didn't i see that this was their whole plan from the word go..

I passed by at the ATM and withdrew R500..i went to buy a few toiletries and bought a 6-pack of Savannah..

As i was walking to the taxi rank my phone vibrated in my bag and i took it out.. It was a number I didn't know. I hesitated to answer what if it's Zuko...

The person kept on calling that they were irritating me now..

I answered

Me: What??

Voice: indlela yokukhuluma nabantu abadala leyo (is that the way of talking to your elders)

Me: Sorry

It was a female voice, sounded a bit old..

Her: Its Grams

Me: Ohw hi Grams

Her: I'm calling you because of your Father

My heart sank, my throat became dry..

Me: My Farth.. What's wrong?

Her: He is very sick and he wants to see you. Your departure took a toll on him

I didn't know what to say..

Her: Funi my son loves you. I am willing to put aside my differences with you for his sake. Can you please come back home?

Is she Being sincere?

Me: That's something i have to think about

Her: What's there to think about? He raised you, he took care of you when you had nowhere to go, he gave you a home and put you through school and you wanna abandon him like that?

Ohw wow so she forgot that i left home because of her, and she's not even sorry..

Her: Hold on he wants to talk to you

What am i gonna say to him? We haven't spoken for a while..

Him: Funi..

Me: Papa..

I was overwhelmed by different emotions..

Him: Kunjani? (how are you)

Me: I'm fine, and how are you?

He coughed a little

Him: ngiyazama (I'm getting there)

Me: I'm glad to hear that

Him: Buya ekhaya Dodo (come back home)

I have always been a daddy's girl and being away from my father like this was too hard for me. We best friends, his my everything we've always been close i love my father more than i love my mother..

I miss him i wanna go back home..

Me: i would like to come home

Him: Please come home

I made a deal with him that i will come back home today...

After talking to him, i went to Romans pizza. Got me a small pizza with a can on Iron brew..

I got a sense of relief after talking to my father, knowing that his alive eases my heart..

After Eating, i took a taxi and went to Jozi's place.. Seeing that it would be my last day there i decided to cook them a delicious dinner..

Zakes walked into the kitchen while i was still busy cooking. I was cooking while playing music and drinking Savannah..

Him: Someone is in a good mood

Me: Ohw i thought i was alone

Him: i was sleeping

He sat down..

Him: What are you cooking?

Me: Just beef stew

Him: Can't wait to taste that

Me: Thank you for letting me guys stay with you

Him: You family

Me: But still i felt like i was crowding your space

Him: Nonsense! This house is too big for me and Jozi

I just smiled..

Him: Uhm Jozi

Me: Yes?

Him: I'm not one to meddle in other people's affairs but..

I looked at him

Him: Zuko has been asking about you

Me: Saying what?

Him: That Chap is into you Funi, his really into you and since you don't wanna talk to him his been a heavy mess

A part of me wants to believe that, but a part of me doesn't want too..

Me: Why is he like that?

Him: Zuko.. After his wife passed on he found drugs as an easy way to escape the pain that he was embedded in..

Me: Zuko is into drugs?

Him: Cocaine to be specific. He needs someone to help him through this Funi

Me: He needs to see a professional, he needs professional help and not me..

It was sad to hear that, but Zuko needs professional help

PART 10 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:04] Ron: PART 11 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Jozi drove me home after me and eating the Dinner I've cooked. I was thinking about what Zakes said to me, that i was very quiet in the car..

Jozi: Why don't you just call the guy?

My mind was far away... I felt her Shaking me a bit.

Me: Huh?

Her: Just call the guy

Me: Who?

Her: You know who

Me: Who said i wanted to call him?

Her: Girl don't play with me, you know what i mean

Me: I'm done with Zuko for good.

Was i really done with him though??...

We got home and Jozi parked by the gate.

Her: Are you ready for that old hag?

Me: pheeew!! Don't even start with that one

Her: Want me to go inside with you?

Me: ya you can...

We got out of the car, got my bag at the back and Walked in. I was nervous, i don't know how my father was going to react, especially how i left..

We knocked then opened the door, they were sitting in the lounge.

My father had a heater close to his legs that blew out warm air.. It wasn't too cold but he looked like he was cold..

My Grandma was reading her Bible with her glasses on..

Me: Sanibonani (Good evening)

They greeted back..

Dad: Sit down girls

Jozi: i am in a hurry unfortunately i cannot not sit

Dad: How is Zakes?

Her: He is okay

I could tell that this topic made her uncomfortable.

Grams: Ushadile? (Are you Married)

Jozi: Eya Koko

Grams: Do you work?

Jozi: Yes i work at Absa

Grams: People with Ambition

I see she's still In her ways..

Jozi: It was great seeing you again Malume

Dad: You too Jozi

Her: Yall have a good night

She looked at me

Her: I'll call you

Me: Sharp Mzala

She walked away..

Me: I'll go put my things at the bedroom

I took my bag and went to put it in the bedroom

I took out my clothes and put them in the wardrobe when my phone started ringing...I looked at it, it was a private numbers...

I don't really answer private calls but the person kept on calling until i answered..

Me: Hello

Voice: Hi

Me: Who is this?

Voice: Promise you won't hang up?

Me: Zuko?

Him: Funi please listen to me

Me: What do you want Zuko??

him: i just wanna see you Funi so we can talk about what happened

His voice was breaking, i could feel the emotions behind that voice..

Me: Meet up so you can get me drunk and rape me at the back seats of your car?

Him: ndiyak'cela Funi (Funi Please)

I don't know but his voice was hitting me deep inside, i found myself wanting to cry..

Me: No Zuko, please leave me alone!

Him: Fu..

I hunged up and threw my phone on my bed.

Tears burned my eyes, Zuko and i we don't know each other that well so why am i even feeling like this?

I felt someone clearing their throat, i looked at the doorway and it was my father.

Him: May i come in?

Me: Yes

I wiped my tears...he sat on my bed.

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Nothing

Him: I remember when you were a little girl, we used to tell me everything.. We talked about everything.

I don't even know how I'm gonna tell my father about what happened..

I sat next to him.

Him: does it have to do with a guy?

I nodded..

Him: Do you want to talk about it?

Me: Not really

Him: How do you feel about him?

Me: Dad it's awkward talking to you about this

Him: a certain guy i don't know is making my baby cry i think i need to know who he is.. Can i have his name at least?

I exhaled..

Me: Zuko Mqela

Him: When did you meet him?

Me: Dad..

Him: Okay im backing off.

He kissed me on my forehead

Him: I'm glad you back

Me: me too

He stood up and went..

My phone beeped, and it was a text from Zuko which read:

"i know you hate me, i know you never wanna see me again and i don't blame you. If i could take back what i did that night i would. I like you alot Funi, and I'm deeply sorry about what happened. I hope that one day you will find the courage to forgive me"

I wish i can just erase what happened that night but i cannot, will i ever Forgive Zuko?? I truly don't know but i hope i will..

A week passed, things at home were peaceful. My father's health was stable my Grandma left a day before..

It was Saturday night around 18:00 i was at Jozi's place me and her were planning on going out for drinks, just have a peaceful night..

Jozi is very slow when it comes to getting ready i have been waiting for her for an hour now..

She was wearing leggings with heels, a black vest and a leather jacket. I was wearing a purple jump suit, with a black belt and purple heels.. I had taken off my braids i had an afro nyana..

Jozi: We can go now before you die!

Me: Its about time!

We took our bags and Walked downstairs.... We made our way to the door but someone beat us up to it and opened first.. Zakes walked in, he was with Zuko. Zuko was holding a very adorable cute baby boy whom i figured it's his son, he was also carrying his bag.

Jozi lost it when she saw the baby..

Jozi: Aphiwe!!

She took him from Zuko

Jozi: How are you baby? Look at you all grown up.. Akasemhle nje Zuks..

Zuko smiled at her..

I looked at him he was looking fresh as always..

Zakes: Are you guys going somewhere?

Jozi: We going out

Zuko looked at me, i looked away trying to avoid eye contact..

Him: Hello Funi

Me: Hi

I wasn't angry at him anymore, I had learned to live with what he did to me.

PART 11 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:06] Ron: PART 12 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I was waiting for Jozi to say the word so we could go. Being in Zuko's presence just did things to me. Still hard for me to take all that hotness in, it was no lie that Zuko is hot. I was mostly looking down or away trying to avoid eye contact..

Jozi: Let's go babe

That was a relief on my side, Zuko looked at me until I exited..

We got to Jozi's Car and she drove to Hatfield. That's where we mostly get down..

We got to Hatfield and we were planning to have fun especially because it was a Saturday. We started off with cocktails, then ciders.. We wanted to take it slow was gonna be a long night...

Jozi was all dancing and mingling with niggas, i was all sitting there thinking about Zuko.. I don't know why he was all in my mind all of a sudden, or was the Alcohol getting to me???

Dj made Matters worse by playing "Donald_Denial"

Especially when he says:

"Babe you in denial, girl you love me so.. That's the reason you should be mine, girl i love you more"

Am i really in denial? Do i have a thing for this guy?

Jozi came to me..

Her: Aii Mzito wabhora waitse?

Me: What did i do?

Her: We came to have fun here and wena you sitting down

Me: I'm just not in the mood

Her: What's wrong?

I took my glass from the table and took a sip then put it back

Me: Its nothing Jozi

She came to sit next to me..

Her: Keng Funi? Talk to me

I felt tears falling..

Me: i can't get him off my mind

Her: What are you talking about?

Me: the more i wanna hate him, it's like the more i fall hard for me

Her: Are we talking about Zuks?

I nodded my head

Her: Maybe you should call him

Me: No

Her: The problem with you is that you stubborn, take the phone and call him

Me: Maybe it's the alcohol talking

Her: alcohol makes a person honest, So go call him..

I took my phone and stood up, i almost fell..

Jozi: careful, do you want me to go with you?

Me: I'm fine

I started walking to the door because it was noisy inside..

I had taken off my heels, can't walk on that when I'm drunk..

I was now outside, i was busy asking myself if i should call him or not..

Me: Come on Funi you can do this..

I took a deep breath and called him.. His phone rang for a long time before he answered. I was even thinking of Hanging up...

Him: Zuks hello.

My heart skipped a beat, i didn't know what to say.. whoever said alcohol gives you confidence clearly hasn't been in my shoes..

Him: Hello???

Me: H.. Hi..

He kept quiet a little..

Me: Funi?

Me: Ye.. Yes..

Him: You the last person i expected a call from

Me: Ohw

Him: i don't mean that in a bad way

Me: Okay.. Uhm Zuko

Him: Ewe?

Me: im.. I just wanna let you know that.. I'm j.. I'm ready to talk.

He kept quiet again..

Me: Zuko, are you still there?

Him: Ndisekhona (I'm Still here) just what you said took me by surprise

Me: i know i was thinking that maybe i should listen to you

Him: How about tomorrow? I'm taking Aphiwe to the zoo you can come too

Me: Then that's perfect..

Him: Should i pick you up or?

Me: I'll meet you there

Him: Okay then

Me: ya i have to go

Him: See you tomorrow

Me: Bye

Him: Bye

I exhaled after hanging up, that was hectic..

I went back to the club and now I could have fun, i could turn up..

I had fun with Jozi dancing like Crazy especially when my favourite song "Alyxx Dione_Chingalinga"

Jozi and i left the club at around 02:00,i was done. I didn't go home we went straight to her house and i crashed there for the night.. I don't like knocking for my father in the early hours of the morning..

I woke up the following day, i had forgotten to drink water before sleeping so ya hangover was playing with me..

I took my phone and i had alot of missed calls from Zuko and my dad.. I looked at the time it

was 11:00am..

I called my father first, I'm sure his worried about me.

Him: Funi

Me: Papa

Him: What happened to you?

Me: I'm sorry Jozi and i left the club late, i didn't have my keys with me and i didn't wanna knock and wake you up

Him: i was worried about you, i hardly slept

Me: I'm sorry

Him: You should've at least called

Me: I'm sorry papa i promise I'll call next time

Him: When are you coming home?

Me: later today

Him: Okay

Me: i love you and I'll see you later

Him: i love you too..

After hanging up i called Zuko...he didn't take that long to answer..

Him: Bunju lam

Me: What?

Him: Eish sorry thought you were someone else

Me: Ohw your gf maybe?

He chuckled.

Him: Maybe

Me: i wonder.

Him: We waited for you

Me: You have a gf Zuks?

Him: Yes

Me: Ohw

Him: She just doesn't know yet

Me: Why?

Him: Listen to the song I'm playing in my car

He increased the volume.. The song was "Donald_Denial"

Me: You know it's such a coincidence that they were playing the same song in the club last night

Him: Is it?

Me: Yes

Him: Then she's in denial for real

This cannot be a coincidence..

PART 12 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:07] Ron: PART 13 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Zuko said that he will come and see me when they get back from zoo. I had to go home to prepare myself. I couldn't decide which outfit to wear, i didn't wanna be too revealing and i didn't wanna look Dull..

It's not like we going on a serious date, the late time i heard he said we'll just go grab something to eat at McDonalds just chill, me him and Aphiwe..

So i wore my black boob tube Mermaid dress, and my black sandals. I put on my hair band, my braids are very long they almost reach my butt..

I didn't put much make up just an eyeliner, mascara, and an eye shadow that complimented my Lip stick.

Zuko was to fetch me at home because my father wanted to see him, i was a bit nervous. My father is not a Difficult person but i really don't know how his gonna react to this situation..

I was pacing up and down at the kitchen, it was now 15:00 my dad was sitting at the table reading a newspaper..

Him: Sit down Dodo you making me dizzy

Me: Sorry

I stood by the kitchen sink. He closed his newspaper.

Him: You look nervous

Me: Hmmmmm? No I'm not nervous just..

Dad: if his a nice decent boy then you do not have to be nervous about meeting.

Me: What if you don't like him?

Him: i thought you said you guys are friends?

Me: We are.. I mean i like him alot

My phone beeped, was a text from him that his at the gate..

Me: His here

I had text him my address earlier..

Dad: Well tell him to come in

I text him to come to the house..

Me: Dad please be nice

Him: i am always nice..

After a minute or so, there was a knock at the door....

Dad: I'll get it

I was very nervous, as somizi would say my heart at that moment left the left and went to the right...

My father stood up and went to open the door...

Dad: Can i help you?

This is Exactly what I was afraid off.

Zuko: Good afternoon Sir, I'm Zuko and I'm here for Funi

My Father opened the door and he got in..

Dad: your Father never taught you that you must take off your hat when you indoors?

Me: Dad...

Zuko took off his hat

Dad: He doesn't even know a simple principle how can I trust him with your life?

Me: Dad you embarrassing me

Dad: Have her home not later than 22:00

Zuko: Yes sir

He looked at me

Zuko: Are you ready To go?

Me: Yes

Dad: Remember one important thing, she might not be the best but she's the only Daughter i have

Zuko: Yes sir

I opened the door and we went..

Me: Sorry about that, my father Is just somehow sometimes

Him: His looking out for you

Me: More like he embarrassed me

He chuckled..

Him: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, and you not bad yourself

He was a Jean, brown timbaland boots and a white tshirt..

Him: Well thank you

He opened the door of his Jaguar for me,and i went inside.. He went to the driver's seat and drove..

I was a bit nervous being in Zuko's presence especially after what happened that night...

Me: Thought Aphiwe would be around

Him: He had a long day, he had to go home and rest a little

Me: Where are we going?

Him: You'll see

I hope it's not a club or lounge or pub and grill because i don't want us going back to square

one..

His phone rang, he took it out and looked at it..

Him: What does she want?

He answered

Him: Fikile.. I'm not busy I'm just driving.. Yeyake did i send you to Cape Town??.. I don't understand why i have to fetch you... Fine I'll be right there..

He hunged up and clicked his tongue.

He kept quiet didn't say anything. I know we not dating kodwa i would like a bit of some explanation..

After a while he looked at ms..

Him: Ohh sorry that was my sister, she was at Cape Town came back today now i have to fetch her phaya e pta station..

Him: Okay

We got to Pta station where buses stop. Looked like buses had just dropped off people because it was a bit full.. Zuko called her again to tell her that we at the station and she said she can see him..

After that call i saw a yellow bone approaching us, she had bags with her.. Didn't tell take her that long to reach where we were standing.

Zuko hugged her.

Zuko: kutheni uMama angandixelelanga ukuba usekapa (why didn't mom tell me that you at cpt)

Her: andazi (i don't know)

Looking at her she seemed as if like she has attitude nyana

Zuko: Funi meet my little sister Fikile but we call her fiks, and fiks meet Funi..

She looked at me

Her: is she your gf?

Zuko: Not really

Her: Good because it'll never work between you and her

She said that while taking her bags and walking away

Zuko: uthi kutheni (what are you trying to say)

Fiks: Ndithetha inyani nje (I'm telling the truth)

Me: Wow!

Zuko: if you gonna be staying at my house you need to drop that attitude

We all walked up to the car..

Me: Can i help you with the bags?

Her: No i carry my own shit!

Zuko: Excuse you?

She organised herself..

Her: Uxolo (sorry)

Zuko took some of the bags and we walked. Why does it look like I'm gonna have it hard with this girl..

PART 13 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:10] Ron: PART 14 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We were at McDonalds having lunch. I didn't touch my meal, i was starring at this fiks in my mind i have already killed her. What was left was for me to jump across the table and strangle her to death..

Zuko shook me a bit..

Zuko: Are you alright?

I faked a smile

Me: Yes i am

I maintained a serious face after that and looked at Fiks..

Zuko: Fiks for how long are you planning to stay at my house?

Fiks: Why? Am i not welcomed?

Zuko: Khange nditsho (i didn't say)

Fiks: Andazi (i don't know)

I drank my soda, i was craving to put my hands on this bitch and turn her into a beauty sandwich..

After that lunch, we left but i didn't touch my meal so i had it as a take away...

We drove up to Zuko's place, his house was at Irene Park. It was big and beautiful..

He took Fiks luggage and we walked inside. I really adored his house, was just very beautiful..

His maid or babysitter was at the kitchen, i couldn't make out if it was a maid or babysitter..

Fiks: Ziyanda!

The woman looked at her..

Her: Fikile, Yeyake!

Fiks went up to her and hugged her.

Ziyanda: uphumaphi ke ngoku? (Where your from)

Fiks: ndivele eKapa (im from Cape Town)

Ziyanda: ubuyokwenza ntoni eKapa (what where you doing)

Fiks: zezi zinto ze modelling (it's this modelling business)

Zuko's phone rang..

Him: Excuse me guys

He walked out..

I stood there not knowing what to say, or how to react I'm sure even this Ziyanda won't like me.. She looked at me.

Her: Molo kaloku sisi (Good afternoon)

Me: Hi

Her: ndingu Ziyanda ke mna (my name is Ziyanda)

Me: Funi

She shook my hand..

Fiks: Let me go and Put my luggage upstairs, Ziyanda you can help me

Ziyanda: Akho ngxaki mntaka dadebawo

Ziyanda helped her with the bags and they went upstairs...

Zuko came back..

Him: That was Zakes, him and Jozi are at this other lounge wanna tag along?

Me: As long as I'll home by home

He smiled..

Him: Then we better get going

We walked out to his car, and he drove to the lounge..

Me: Your house is beautiful

Him: Thank you

I looked down

Him: Yintoni ngoku? (what's wrong now)

Me: Why was your sister rude to me?

Him: Fiks is like that, just don't mind her

I'd understand if she was 13 kodwa she's too old to be doing that shit..

We got to the lounge, was somewhere ko Jhb..

We went in and joined Jozi with Zakes. It was a busy lounge wasn't that full because it looked expensive not everyone can afford to be here..

Jozi: Nice of you guys to join us...

Me: I'm happy to be here

Zuko: What should i get you?

Me: Hunter's Gold

Him: Okay

Zakes: Let me go with you man

They both went..

Jozi looked at me..

Her: and then?

Me: i met his sister and girl that bitch has attitude for years

Jozi: Are you for real?

Me: You have no idea, i felt like strangling her right there

Jozi: don't let her get to you....

I waited and waited for Zuko to come back with my Hunter's Gold kodwa Dololo (nothing)..

Me: i wonder what's taking Zuko soo long

Jozi frowned..

Me: What's up?

Her: They probably doing coke wherever they are

Me: Zakes is on that staff too?

She nodded her head..

Me: What's his excuse?

Her: i don't know and i don't care

They showed up after an hour, Zuko was empty handed..

Me: What happened to my Hunter's Gold?

Him: Shit i forgot...

He was sniffing and wiping his nose

Him: I'll get it

Me: I'll get for myself.

He gave me a R200 note, and i went to the bar..

Me: Sorry can i please have some Hunter's Gold?

The bar man was mixing some drinks, probably making a cocktail

Me: That looks nice

He smiled.

Him: Wanna try it?

Me: Yea why not?

He poured for me and gave it to me..

Him: Its on the house

Me: Lucky me

I took a sip

Me: Hmmmm

Him: And?

Me: You know your story

I took a sip again and he was all starring at me..

Me: Something wrong?

Him: No you just... You very pretty

I blushed..

Him: You more pretty when you blush

Me: Stop it..

Him: I'm sure a beautiful lady like you is not here alone

Before i could answer i heard a voice behind me saying

"you damn right about that"

I knew it was Zuko.. He came up to me. He gently squeezed my cheek

Him: Bunju i was wondering what's taking you so long

Me: Well i.. I was trying out some cocktails.

He looked at the cocktail

Him: That looks cheap

Barman: it looks cheap but she was here buying Hunter's Gold

Me: Say what?

Zuko took the glass of cocktail and poured it at him..

Zuko: Sundiqhela kwedini yeva?

The barman took off his tshirt.. And he laughed..

Zuko: You should be happy that I'm here, because the money i spend in this lounge can buy you

your life!!

Haibo Zuko!!!!.... Amazing what drugs can do to a person.

PART 14 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:11] Ron: PART 15 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We just got to his house, he opened the kitchen door and we walked in.. It was just after 00:00 i couldn't go home that late and knock for my father, i hate waking him up. Plus i didn't wanna go home and hear him talking about killing Zuko..

I took off my shoes as we were walking upstairs, i was following him as he was leading the way..

I was angry, Zuko shouldn't have acted that way..

I took off my shoes when we got to his bedroom, he tried coming close and touching me but i slightly pushed him off..

Me: Please!

He put his hands in his pockets..

Him: i don't understand why you angry

Me: What you did was uncalled for, bububhanxa Kphela (it was stupid)

Him: Uyibonile la chap ukuba ithethe njani nawe? (did you see how that guy talked to you)

Me: You caused unnecessary drama

He sniffed and wiped his nose..

Him: I'm not gonna apologise for standing up to that fool for you!

Me: i didn't expect you to apologise

Him: Good!

Me: Good..

Him: G. O. O. D

He walked out after saying that..

My rang as i sat on the his bed, i took it out from my bag and answered it was Jozi..

Me: Dade

Her: Dade I'm just calling to find out if you have arrived?

Me: Ya i did

Her: wasn't your Father angry?

Me: I'm not at home

Her: Where are you?

Me: Don't freak out

Her: Why would i freak out?

Me: I'm at Zuko's place

Her: What!! (shouting)

Me: i just said don't freak out..

Her: What are you doing at Zuko's place you supposed at home

Me: long story Jozi

Her: Fine then I was just calling to see that you okay

Me: Thank you

Her: I'll call you tomorrow..

Me: Okay bae

Her: Bye

Me: Bye

I hunged up put my phone back in my bag..

I went to shower, then i wore one of his Tshirts... Before i got in bed i went downstairs to look for him but he wasn't around. The house was very quiet..

I went back upstairs and tried to sleep..

I woke up in the morning, the sun was hitting me hard. I got up and stretched myself.. I looked on my side and it dawned on me that i slept alone in that big cold bed.. I got out of bed and went to wash my face in the bathroom and then rinsed my mouth....

I took off his tshirt and folded it then placed it nicely on his bed. I put on my dress and went downstairs.... To my surprise he was In the kitchen preparing breakfast. He was wearing a suit with Aphiwe sitting on the high chair busy making noise..

Zuko: Boy I'm warning you for the last time..

Me: Good morning

He looked at me..

Him: i was making you breakfast, thought you were gonna wake up to a delicious breakfast..

Me: Don't bother, I'll be eating at home

I started walking to the door...

Him: Funi

I stopped..

Him: I'm sorry

I turned around and looked at him, he was looking at me..

Me: Its okay

He came to me and held my hands..

Him: i acted like a jerk the whole night and I'm sorry

Me: Is this what's gonna happen everytime when we go out?

He looked down, he was ashamed..

Him: i..funi the honest truth is..

Me: Is?

Him: i don't know how to treat a woman right

Me: How is that? You were married weren't you?

Him: Yes but that doesn't mean that she was happy throughout our whole marriage..

Me: What's the problem? Are you abusive? Do you beat a woman till she can't walk?

Him: No.. I..

Me: Emotional abuse? Sexual abuse? What is it really bec..

He kissed me while i was busy Trying to finish my sentence.. After a few seconds he pulled out, that kiss left me begging for more..

Him: Would you just let me finish?

I let him be..

Him: i have never raised my hand to a woman, no i am not abusive in any of those ways..

I looked at him..

Him: i just.. I fail to appreciate a woman that's in my life

Me: Why is that?

He shrugged his shoulders..

Him: Guess I'm just a jerk by nature

I laughed a bit at that comment

Him: And what do you know, the corners of her mouth moved

Me: Stop it

Him: i like you Funi, and i don't want what happened last night ruin my chances of being with you

Me: You just gotta stop acting like you crazy

Him: For you I'll stop

Me: Okay

He looked at me all smiling

Me: i think we burning something

He turned around..

Him: Shit.

He took the dish cloth and moved the pan from the stove

Aphiwe: Whuuuu!!

Zuko: There goes our breakfast

Me: At least you tried

Him: Maybe we can go out..

He looked at his wrist watch..

Him: i still have a few minutes before I go to the office, let me just go get my things..

I walked up to Aphiwe he was very cute..

Me: Hey you cutie pie

I let him wrapped his tiny hand around my thumb of wish he attempted to put in his mouth...

Me: You just eat anything you come across

Voice: That's because his tothing

I looked up it was fiks... He came to Aphiwe and pushed me off the way a little

Her: Hey boy

She picked him up..

Me: Fiks right?

Her: Who wants to know?

Me: if i may ask, why don't you like me? I mean don't you think it's odd because we don't even know each other that well??

Her: i don't know hey, let me see

She kept quiet for a while..

Her: Maybe it's Because my brother is rich and every trash wants to throw themselves at him

I raised up my hand, i almost slapped her..

Me: Ungang'jwayeli kabi uyezwa??

Her: i wish you could do it!! I wish you could motherfucken slap me!!

Me: Why you making this a big deal, I'm not even dating you!!

Her: My brother is me!!

We were raising our voices at each other, Aphiwe was now crying...

Fiks: Ndizok'qhekeza uyeva Sundiqhela!! (i will beat you up)

Zuko showed up, he took Aphiwe from fiks..

Zuko: Fiks go upstairs

Fiks: But..

Him: I'm not gonna repeat myself

She clicked her tongue and left.. I was now crying, when i get too angry i just cry... He hugged me with his other arm

Him: Uxolo Bunju lam

I don't think me and Zuko's family will get along..

PART 15 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:16] Ron: PART 16 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Zuko and i had decided to persue a relationship. We have been dating for 2 weeks now. Our relationship was peaceful, i love spending time with him, i love what we have i just love being with him as a whole..

He was very good to me, he was a gentleman and i also like spending time with his son. Fortunately fiks up and Left, she went back to Cape Town to persue her modelling career. She will be gone for about 6 months and that was a relief from my side..

My father was in hospital, there was complications with his prosthetic valve he was admitted 3 days ago..

To prevent depression and stress Zuko decided that i should move in with them for a while until my father gets discharged because he was scared that if i live alone at home i'll constantly keep on thinking alot and i'll eventually get depressed..

It was just around 13:00 Zuko had promised to come and pick me up so we go and see my father.

He did keep his promise, he came early at around 12:45..

I was in the balcony just getting fresh air and preventing myself from thinking too much about this situation..

I heard the sliding door closing, i turned around it was Zuko.

Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: I think so

He noticed that i wasn't alright. He came and hugged me..

Him: His gonna be fine

Me: i hope so

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: Let's go

We walked out to his car. Ziyanda was babysitting Aphiwe as usual.

Zuko was holding my hand in the car while driving, he really was trying to make me feel better....

We passed by at the mall, got him a basket full of fruits and some green salad with 100% Fruit juice..

I am very scared of losing my father i won't lie, his all i have and if he dies, i don't know what's gonna become of me..

We got to the hospital, he was in a government hospital couldn't afford putting him in a private hospital i couldn't afford that especially with my small change i get at work.. I didn't wanna ask Zuko for help, i didn't want him thinking that im using him for his money, or I'm in this relationship because of his money..

The reason why i asked him to come with me this time around is because i want him to see that my Father needs serious medical care at a different hospital..

When we got there he was not in a good state, the ward just had this uncomfortable foul smell was just an environment you wouldn't wanna find yourself in. My father shares the ward with 7 other men, the ward had 8 beds of which 2 of those beds were empty..

He was laying down, he looked pretty sick he couldn't get up..

Me: Papa

He opened his eyes and looked at me. He looked drained, he looked weak, he was pale was just a state i didn't wanna find him in because yesterday he seemed to be making progress, but today he was grave sick..

I put the food on his shelf..

Me: i thought you were making progress, you were fine yesterday what happened today?

His neighbour answered..

Neighbour: ahh umnaka uphathekile today (Today his very sick)

Me: Did he eat anything or even bath?

Neighbour: Akavukanga neze today (he didn't even wake up today)

Me: Where are there Nurses? Couldn't they help him?

Neighbour: Cha Sisi uyazi nawe ukuthi Kunjani (you know how it is here)

That was a very heartbreaking situation..

Neighbour: ngimuphe amageu but still

Me: What happened to the other 2 of your mates?

Him: ishayile sisi, ishaye izolo ebusuku (They died last night)

Me: That means people don't last here?

Him: uyazi it's a cardiac ward we need serious attention but this Nurses don't even look at us..

I was hoping that Zuko was hearing this, maybe then he would wanna help. I looked at him, he was on his phone he didn't even look like he cared about what was happening.. He didn't even greet my father.

Me: i think i should feed him something

Neighbour: ithi ngikuncede (let me help you)

He got off his bed to come and help me. We sat my father in semi upright position and put pillows behind his back to balance him..

Neighbour: mnaka indodakazi yakho izokubona (Your daughter is here to see you)

He was breathing very fast, he didn't even have energy to let words "hello" come out from his mouth. He just looked at me and smiled at him..

I started off by at least brushing his teeth i had asked for a spitbowl from the nurses, after that I wiped his face with his facial cloth.. His neighbour was full hands in helping Zuko was still standing there busy on his phone..

My father looked at Zuko..

Him: Z.. Zu..

I looked at Zuko..

Me: Zuko

He looked at me..

Me: My father is calling you

He just looked at him and nodded his head then went back to what he was doing..

I felt like a knife was just struck in my heart..

I fed my father, i even let the friend eat. I fed him the green salad of which he didn't finish and then i let him drink the fruit juice..

Neighbour: awusho Sisi ezakwakho lezi? (is he your bf)

I nodded my head..

Him: ngathi ngike ngamubona kwelinye iphepha Ndaba lamabhizinisi, ungosomabhizinisi? (i

once saw him in a business newspaper, is he a business man)

Me: Ya his the CEO of MQ

Him: ngiyasho (i did say it)

After feeding my dad we chilled just talking me him and his friend. The friend was telling us old funny stories, my father was now looking a bit better think that food helped him alot...

I would look at Zuko every now and now, yazi he looked like he would rather be somewhere else than here. He looked irritated, he looked disgusted.. I think my father also noticed because he would look at him then look at me..

After an hour the Nurse rang the bell indicating that visiting hours are over..

Zuko put his phone away..

Him: Thank God, you will find me in the car.

He walked away..

I was very embarrassed and very hurt by his attitude.. I stood up and hugged my father.

Me: I'll see you tomorrow

Him: Take care of yourself

Me: i will

Him: i don't trust him Funi, i don't think his the right man for my little girl...

Friend: Ahh mnaka don't worry, bonke osamabhizinisi bahlala ba busy, buka nje bahlala bacofa abomakhalekhukhwini (all business men are like that, they always on their phones)..

He was saying that to make my father feel better..

Me: Papa his just stressed too much workload, it's not easy running a big company..

Him: Are you happy?

I faked a smile....

Me: i am happy, he treats me good..

My phone beeped it was a text from Zuko which read "i don't have the whole day"

Me: i have to go Papa it's Jozi she wants to see me

I hate lying to my father, but i also don't wanna stress him..

I hugged him and Walked out to the car...

I got to the car and i could tell that Zuko had just did drugs..

I didn't say anything.

Him: tomorrow you'll come alone, I'm already late for my meeting..

Really meeting while his this high?

I couldn't stop the tears, i was saddened by my father's state, i was also hurt at what Zuko did..

He wiped my tears...

Him: What's wrong?

I shrugged my shoulders..

He pulled Me closer and i laid my head on his shoulder..

Him: sulila Bunju, your Father will be fine

Did he see how he was? Ohw i forgot he was on his phone the whole time..confronting him about that would be useless especially high as he is..

PART 16 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:16] Ron: PART 17 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

He dropped me at home and then went on about his business. I couldn't stop thinking about my father, i couldn't stop praying for him. I needed him to be better, I still need him..

I didn't do much for the day, just watched alot of Tv and took afternoon naps.

Ziyanda left at around 17:00 and i decided to cook dinner. Aphiwe was busy crawling around on the kitchen floor as i was busy preparing dinner..

One thing i don't like Is another woman cooking for my Man, i am seriously not down for that..

I cooked rice, chicken curry and did a few salads..

When i was done i dished up and put our plates in the oven for the time being..

I took Aphiwe and went to bathe him, then i fed him Butternut and prepared his bottle, then rocked him to sleep in his nursery chair. His bedroom was very beautiful, was blue and white. He laid on my chest while sucking on his bottle busy making those cute sounds..

I am starting to love Aphiwe like his mine.. I was patting him gently on his back, that i didn't notice Zuko who was standing at the door with his arms folded and smiling at me, i smiled back at him..

Me: Shhhhh..

Him: I'm going to take a shower (Whispering)

I stood up placed Aphiwe in his crib, then gave him his pacifier....

I went out and switched off his light..

I went to the bathroom, and heard the shower water running..

I took off my clothes and went to join him..

Me: need some company?

He looked at me from head to toe while Whistling.

Him: How can i say No to that...

I got inside and closed the shower door..

He started running his hands on my naked body with water running all over our bodies. We started kissing, he was grabbing my Ass. I wanted him he wanted me...

He lowered his hands and put it in between my thighs, i parted my legs to give him easy access..

We continued kissing while he was finger fucking me. It was extreme, i was losing my mind, i was feeling pleasure and a bit of pain at the same time..

I went down on him too, he was moaning and grabbing my braids off which he was going to pull them out. He got me up and was running his hands on my curves.

Him: i love you soo much

Me: i love you too

We had crazy, nasty sex in the shower. Zuko was hitting all the right places making me scream in pleasure.. It was just a feeling i couldn't explain..

After that steaming hot session in the shower, we got out and went to wipe our wet bodies in the bedroom. He pulled Me closer to his towel and started wiping me..

After that, i lotioned and put on one on his shirts. I wasn't wearing any underwear. We didn't use a condom but luckily I was on a pill..

We went downstairs to eat dinner, he had his dinner with Ice tea and i had a glass of wine..

He was looking at me as i was eating..

Me: What?

Him: You know after my wife passed on, i didn't think that I was going to love again..

Me: You hardly talk about her

I could see how uncomfortable this topic was making him..

Him: Its a situation that i don't like talking about..

I didn't force the issue..

Him: Before i forget, i have something to tell you

Me: Yes?

He wiped his mouth with his napkin

Him: You remember my friend Remza?

Me: i do

Him: His wife is the manager of some jewellery shop in Wonderpark mall, Sterns jewellery division of TFG.

Me: i didn't know he has a wife

Him: He does...one of the staff resigned and they need someone..

Me: Ohw

Him: ive talked to Remza and he said his gonna talk to her, tomorrow you must do your CV.. The job is yours already.

I looked at him.. I didn't believe Zuko didn't run this by me, he just took a decision like that all by himself.

Him: Don't worry it pays well around R5000 a month. Working hours are a bitch but you'll pull through..

I drank my wine...

Me: i wish that you could've ran this by me first before making such a rash decision for me.

Him: You don't want this job?

Me: i do but, i just think that ngabe ukhulume nami kqala (i wish you could've spoken to me first)

Him: I'm sorry i didn't think it was gonna be an issue considering that your current job is making your peanuts

Me: That's my queue to leave

I stood up and started walking, he ran after me and held my hand...

Him: I'm sorry i didn't mean it like that

I folded my arms...

Me: What did you mean?

He came closer and put his hands around my waist, with his forehead against mine..he kissed my nose.

Him: I'm sorry, you right i should've ran it by you first

Me: You should've

Him: Does that mean tomorrow you'll do your CV then go and See her?

I exhaled..

Me: Fine I'll go

Him: That's my babe

He kissed me..

Him: How about dessert upstairs?

He said that while kissing me on my neck

Me: I'd like that..

He picked me up and we went upstairs..

I just love Zuko and i hope our relationship will succeed..

I woke up the following day and bathe,i had to meet up with that woman very early before 11:00..

I waited for Ziyanda to come, as i couldn't leave Aphiwe alone. Zuko leaves very early, at 6am his gone..

Ziyanda came, and i didn't even have breakfast i went to Wonderpark straight.....

I made copies of my CV and certified all the necessary documents then went to Sterns. I don't know how this is gonna turn out because i only have matric. I don't have any tertiary qualification, no job experience i only have matric....

I arrived at Sterns jewellery at around 10am. It was a small beautiful jewellery shop..

There was a black and a white worker around the counters. I went to one of them..

Me: Excuse me..

She looked at me

Her: Hi

Me: hi.. My name is Funeka Mahlangu, and I'm here to see the manager

Her: Let me just check if she's not busy

She went to the back office..

I looked around and it was a fancy store, all those rings and what not..

The lady came back to me.

Her: You can go in

Me: Thank you..

I went to her office. I thought i was gonna see a black woman, but it was a white lady. She was very beautiful and looked young probably in her mid 30s...

I didn't know Remza was married to a white woman..

Her: Funeka is it?

Me: Yes

Her: Please sit down

She stretched her hand indicating i should give her the Cv and i did..

She paged through it..

Her: Zuks is putting me in a very difficult position

I was very nervous...

Her: You have no experience in anything?

Me: Unfortunately not.

Her: You've never worked anywhere?

Me: No mam'

She looked at me, i didn't know what was running in her mind..

PART 17 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:18] Ron: PART 18 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I'm still sitting in that chair, I'm very nervous. This woman looks a bit intimidating but her smile is very sincere, it relaxes me a bit..

Her: You've never worked with people before?

Me: I'm currently working at fish n chips, I'm not sure if that will count

Her: Ofcourse it counts, all i want is at least experience in working with people.

She hands me a certain form..

Her: Sit here and fill everything in

She stands up, she takes her mug and walks out..

I look at the form, it's not complicated just straight forward questions. I answer the Questions, mostly about customers. It's 20 Questions and before i know it, I'm done with them..

She comes back, she marks i get 18/20 she looks impressed..

Her: Can you start Monday?

Me: Uhm Yes Ofcause

She lifts her mug up and drinks whatever is inside..

Her: Congratulations you got the job..

Wow that was easier than i thought. I stand up I'm happy..

Her: one more thing, we wear black and white and be here at 7:45 we open at 9:00 and close at 17:00

Me: Thank you very much, you won't be disappointed

Her: i hope not.

I walked out of there and go to wimpy. I get some burgers, I'm thinking of going to Zuko's workplace i wanna surprise him with lunch. He takes lunch at 13:00 now it's 12:00 but I'm sure that won't be a problem..

His company is situated at Pretoria West, so before i know it I'm there....

.

It's first time being here and his company is just wow. There's screens around showing different games, there's pictures of games all around. It was like i was walking in a different world...

I walk up to the reception, the receptionist is on the phone I have the burgers i bought with me.. She sees me then puts the phone down.

Me: Afternoon

Her: Afternoon can i help you?

Me: uhm Yes I'm here for Zuko Mqela

Her: Do you have an appointment?

Me: Unfortunately no

Her: Let me call him and see if his not busy

Me: Please do, tell him it's Funeka

Her: Okay

She picks up the phone and dials his extension..

Her: Yes sir there's a lady here she wants to see you her name is Funeka.. Yes sir..

She puts the phone down..

Her: You can go through, go to the elevator and press 1..

Me: Thank you

I walk up to the elevator, it opens and i walk inside. It closes then i select 1. A voice like Sarie suddenly starts talking "You have selected floor number 1"

This is fancy....

I get to the first floor and it's one big Ass office.. I like the colours of the building, green and white...

I approach his office door there's a green android Robot just close to the door.. As i pass it, it lights up and start speaking "Welcome to MQ"

I swear this was just beautiful.. I get to a desk of some woman whom I'm thinking that it's his assistant..

She's a blonde, she's very beautiful..

Me: Good afternoon

She looks at me

Me: I'm Funeka I'm here to see Zuko

Her: You can go though

I walk up to his office. His door is glass, everything is just glass you can see whatever his doing...

I stand at the door first looking at him. His on his laptop, his concentrating hard on whatever his doing..

I cleared my throat, he looked at me... We looked at each other for a while before saying anything..

Him: So you just gonna stand there and look at me

Me: That's the whole plan

He closed his laptop, and i close the door. I don't know why I'm closing the door because they can still see us..

I walk up to his desk and he meets me halfway..

I put the food on the table.. He kisses me on my forehead.

Him: Are you alright?

Me: Yes

His hands are around my waist, his leaning against the table..

Him: How did it go?

Me: It went well, it went well, it went well

Him: That's good high 5 partner we did it

I give him a high 5..

Him: I'm proud of you

He plants a kiss in my lips..

Me: i brought you lunch

Him: You brought me lunch

His phone rings, he picks it up..

Him: Yes?..

He looks at his wrist watch

Him: Now?.. Okay I'll tune in..

He takes the remote and tunes into some channel.. There's a woman who is preaching in an auditorium full of people

Me: You religious?

Him: Not exactly

I look at the screen again, i know this woman. She's a well known business woman and a philanthropist. Richest woman in SA she owns a Gold mine

Me: Ohw she's delivering a speech looks like a seminar..

I sit down..

Me: i love this woman you can call her my role model

Zuko: You do?

Me:Yes alot I'm hoping to attend one of her seminars, she gives good motivation

Him: She is good, and she happens to be my mother

I laughed..

Me: Get out here

He looks at me, his not laughing or smiling..

Me: Wait are you serious?

Him: Yes Bongiwe Sithebe is my mother

I'll be damned!! What's next? Bill Gates is his uncle

PART 18 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:19] Ron: PART 19 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Monday came, i was ready to start at my new job but i was nervous at the same time. I had resigned over the weekend at my previous job, my colleagues were very sad about this but i had promised to pop in for a visit every now and then....so there i was standing infront of the mirror looking at my own reflection. I was wearing a high waist black skirt that took out the shape of my curves perfectly, black fish net stockings, Black high heels and a white short sleeved tshirt. I had my braids tied up like a neat bun as always with a black bandana around the bun...Zuko walked in the room as i was still starring at myself,he hugged me from the back and planted a wet kiss on my neck...

Me: Are you trying to make me late for work? Just because wena you off doesn't mean im off

too..

Him: You just look so sexy I'm even afraid to let you go to work..

I chuckled..

Me: i am a bit nervous about today

Him: Why?

Me: Its a new environment, i don't really know anything about jewellery what if i flunk?

Him: You will learn, now come on let me drive you to work..

He spanked my Ass as we were walking out..

I couldn't wait to tell my dad about my new job, since i won't be able to visit him in the afternoons anymore i will visit him at night from 19:00-20:00 that's if Zuko agrees to drive me..

Zuko dropped me off at the mall, and said he will see me during lunch time. I gave him a goodbye kiss and Went to work....

It was 7:40 when i got there, the Boss opened the door for me and i Walked inside.. She looked at my outfit then went to the back office and i followed her.....

Boss: Natalie this is Funeka, and Funeka this is Natalie..

Natalie greeted me with a warm smile, i greeted her back. She was a pretty blonde...

Boss: We also have another worker, she works flexible hours mostly works on weekends..

At least tell me she's black please..

The boss looked at me, and cleared her Throat..

Her: Funeka there's a few things we need to discuss about your outfit..

Okay.....

Her: The fishnet stockings are not working for me at all, they make you look like a hooker..

Ohh wow!!!!...

Me: Ohh sorry i didn't know

Her: And please apply make up next time. I am not saying that you not beautiful but it will make you look more professional..

Me: Yes mam'

Her: Please call me Tannie

Me: Tannie?

She rolled her eyes..

Natalie: It means Aunty in Afrikaans..

I did isiZulu at school, so for this bitch to be rolling her eyes at me i seriously don't know what's her story....

Tannie: Okay girls. Today's target is R20 000, make sure you give out alot of rewards cards, and open those new accounts..

I didn't know what she was talking about, and i didn't wanna ask too..

Tannie: Natalie please go and show Funeka how the system works and help her with the password..

Natalie: Okay Tannie

Natalie looked at me, then we both stood up and went to the computer..

Natalie: i think it will be better if you could get a diary so you can note down everything...

She went to get a notebook for me to write everything....

Natalie showed me where to go and what to do when someone comes to pay their account, and also when someone wants to purchase something. It wasn't a difficult procedure, just alot going on to get me confused.....

We opened the doors at 09:00, and i stood behind my counter.. Customers started coming in, i would ask Natalie to help me where i didn't understand....

I must say i was doing pretty well for a newbie, i made a sale of R 2 000 on a silver diamond ring.. Everything i did i noted it down in my diary.....

As i was working there, i was surprised to see Remza and Zuko walking in.. They both came to me.

Remza: Hey, it's Funi right?

Me: Yes..

Remza: So you got the job?

Me: Yes..

Him: Congratulations

Me: Thank you

He turned and looked at Natalie..

Remza: More Natalie

Natalie waved at him...

Natalie: Should i call her for you?

Remza: Naa I'll just surprise her

He made his way to the back office..

I was left there standing with Zuko..

Him: So kuqhubeka ntoni apha? (what's going on here)

Me: Ahh nothing much just doing sales..

He squeezed my cheek..

Him: i am very proud of you

Me: Thank you love..

We chatted a bit, then Remza and The boss came out from the back office..

Tannie: Hey Zuks keep your hands to yourself don't disturb my employees

Zuko: What can i say? Your workers look sexy..

Tannie: Let's go boys

They started walking out, Tannie looked at Natalie

Tannie: ek kom Natalie

Natalie: Okay Tannie..

They walked out all laughing and talking.. Natalie came to me..

Her: Look at her, laughing as if like she's a good person

Me: What do you mean?

Her: She's fucking both of them!

Me: Are you for real?

Her: Yes..Zuks comes here most of the time and they stay at the back office for a long time, then she will come out fixing her shirt and Zuks will be wiping a lipstick from his lips..

Me: Wow!

Natalie: colleague..i see you getting close with this Zuks guy, stay away his bad news..

Me: in what way?

Her: His done fucked girls in this workplace, colleagues of mine who came and went.. Some women say his abusive, his into drugs, his involved in Gangsterism..

Me: Are you serious?

Her: Yes! I don't if you know Zakes but his a Gangster together with Remza and Zuko

Me: doesn't Zuko own a company?

Her: That's just a front to cover up for his real lifestyle.

Me: Ohw

Her: Stay away from Zuko, he killed his wife

Me: That's tragic

Her: He is the devil, he is bad news..

I was very shocked at what Natalie was saying..

PART 19 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAW

[04/14, 13:20] Ron: PART 20 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

It was now 12:00 was my lunch time, Zuko kept his promise he did come and we went to spur to have lunch there.. At work We get 1 hour lunch, when i come back The boss is gonna have her lunch then later it's gonna be Natalie...

I was sitting there and looking out of the window, my mind was very far away i was thinking about what Natalie had told me earlier about Zuko. Was she being Truthful? Am i truly dating a heartless dangerous man, or its just gossip?.....

I didn't realise that i was deep in my thoughts until Zuko shook my hand. I snapped out of it and looked at him..

Me: Huh?

He gave me a side smile.. That ever so seductive, sexy side smile that could turn you on right there..

Him: You haven't touched your food, u grand?

I nodded my head yes..

Him: So what are your plans for this coming weekend?

Me: i think I'll be working.. And you?

He lifted his fork to his mouth..

Him: Its my brother's wedding, but since you working I guess will skip..

Me: You cannot skip your brother's wedding

Him: i can, and i will..

Me: Zuko..

He interrupted me before i could even finish the sentence..

Him: Bunju you can't take a day off you have just started at work..

Me: Zuko he is your brother, I'm sure Bo..

He hit the table hard, that scared me a bit..

Him: Yiyeke maan Funi, kanti utheni na! (i said leave it)..

All Eyes moved to our table, that was definitely an embarrassing moment..

He calmed himself down and then reached out across the table and held my hand...

Him: Uxolo maan Skat, just that.. Andifuni ukuthetha ngomtshato ka brother wami (I'm sorry, i just don't wanna talk about my brother's wedding)

Me: Its fine..

I said that so that we can move on from what happened, but the truth of the matter was that it was not fine, it was not fine for Zuko to have reacted like that. I didn't even said anything that was upsetting, i just wanted to be a supportive girlfriend but it seems as if like he has issues with his family, and i don't wanna be a part of those issues.....

We continued eating our lunch in silence i didn't wanna say something that could tick him off..

After finishing eating, he walked me back to work at around 12:45..

We got at the door and he kissed me on my cheek..

Him: I'll fetch you later

Me: Okay

Him: i love you

He said that while squeezing my cheek..

Him: And smile you can't welcome customers into the store with that ugly frown on your face..

It was hard not to smile, so i smiled and looked away..

Him: much better

He held my hand and brushed the back of it with his thumb..

Him: Jonga Bunju, i am truly sorry about earlier. I just have alot of stress from work...

Yeah right!!!

Me: i understand..

He smiled at me..

Him: see you later then

Me: Later it is..

He let go of my hand and started walking away, while I walked inside the shop.. Natalie gave me a weird look and i just ignored her..

I went to my counter and just did my work..

When the clock hit 17:00 i was tired as hell.. My feet hurt standing from 09:00-17:00 was no joke..they don't pay R5000 for nothing, you really put in all your energy...

We went out of the shop, and Natalie locked up.. After locking up, she gave The boss the keys to the safe. We said our goodbyes then we went our separate ways..

As i was about to exit i heard someone calling my name, i turned around and it was my boss i waited for her... I wonder what she wants.

Her: Are you going to wait for Zuko?

Me: Uhm Yes

Her: Well then good we gonna wait together, I'm also gonna wait for my husband. He is fetching me today, I'm having a bit of some problems with my car..

Me: Its okay..

We walked out and waited at the parking lot..

Her: So for how long have you been dating Zuko?

Me: Not that long

Her: i see

It was a very awkward moment i won't lie..

Her: i must say that i was very surprised when i learned that you two are seeing each other

Me: Why is that?

She looked at me from head to toe..

Her: Don't get me wrong, i.. I never thought that you would be his type

Me: What is his type?

Him: I've always seen him with different girls..

Me: You would know that Because you one of the girls

I said that in a very low tone..

Her: Pardon?

I looked at her

Me: Excuse me?

Her: Look Funi i am trying to be your friend here and look out for you..

I gave her a fake smile..

Me: Thank you..

I saw Zuko's car approaching us..

Me: i think that's my queue to leave, see you tomorrow Tannie

She smiled at me, but it wasn't a friendly smile...

I left her there and went to Zuko's car.. I opened the door and went inside..

Him: Was that Zelda you were standing with?

Me: Is that her name?

Him: You don't even know your boss' name

Me: i know her as Tannie

He chuckled..

Him: Why was she standing there with you?

Me: She's waiting for her hubby to fetch her apparently there's something wrong with her car..

He gave me a confused expression..

Him: She came with her car this morning

Me: Really?

Him: Yes, her car is perfectly fine

Me: So meaning she lied?

Him: Ndicinga njalo (i think so)

I'll be damned!!

PART 20 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:37] Ron: PART 21 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We got home at around 18:00. I was tired as hell, my feet hurt i didn't want anything to do with anything. I just wanted to bath, eat and then sleep.. I was relieved to find that Ziyanda has cooked Dinner, and Aphiwe was on the floor playing with his toys...

Zuko: I'll be in my study, i need to fax a few papers somewhere..

Me: Okay

He walked to his study...

I looked at Ziyanda..

Me: Thank you very much Ziyanda you don't know how much i appreciate you cooking..

Although i don't like people cooking for my Man, but at this instance i had no choice i was very tired. And Zuko doesn't like takeaways that much....

The house phone rang.

Me: I'll get that you can go home

Her: i will see you tomorrow

Me: Thank you..

I walked up to the wall and answered the phone..

Me: Hello..

A female voice started speaking..

Her: Who is this?

Me: the question i should be asking is who are you?

Her: Ye ntombazana ndini! Ndingathetha no nyana wami? (can i speak to my son)

Is this who i think it is? Is it Miss Mqela?

I didn't know what to say, i felt like if i say something I will say something that's wrong so the best thing i did was to put the phone down.....

That was a low move, they say first impressions last and at this instance i might have made a bad one....

There was nothing i could do about the situation, so i just went upstairs and took a long relaxing bath....just what I needed..

After taking that long warm relaxing bath, i got out and dried my wet body.....

I then walked up to the bathroom cabinet and opened it, i was looking for some toothpaste when i stumbled upon a few bottles of pills.. I took them out and put them on the counter. Some were still sealed and some were half empty..

I read through and it was prescription pills...

Me: "Luzuko Mqela.. Take one pill 3 times a day"

I read further and the pills were for "manic depression".. That was strange, it was very strange you trying to tell me that Zuko is suffering from a mental disorder..

I was very shocked i won't lie, why didn't Zuko tell me about this? I mean we as a couple we should trust each other and be able to tell each other everything.....

As i was standing there introspecting his pills i suddenly heard his voice in the bedroom calling my name.. I quickly put away the pills exactly where i found them...

I then heard the bathroom door opening, he entered while holding Aphiwe in his arms..

Him: i wondered where you disappeared too..

Me: Was bathing

He looked at my body that was half covered by the towel..

Him: So many things i could do to you right now, but..

He bit his lower lip...

Him: I'll restrain for now

I smiled at him, then i remembered that I must tell him that his mother called...

Me: Uhm.. Your mother called

He looked at me..

Him: What did she say?

Me: Just wanted to talk to you..

Him: I'll call her later

Me: Okay..

Him: How was she on the phone?

Me: She was uhm okay.. Miss Mqela was just alright

Him: That's how you addressed her, as Miss Mqela?

Me: Isn't she Miss Mqela

Him: No, she's Mrs Sithebe

Me: i didn't know

Him: ask next time, she doesn't like being addressed with that surname

Me: I'm sorry.. I will ask next time

Him: very well.. You will find us at the dinning room eating

Me: Okay

He walked out with Aphiwe still in his arms..

I continued drying myself, when i was done i put on the lotion then wore my pjs and went to join them..

We had a nice peaceful dinner, Ziyanda was a great cook o won't lie..

Him: Now that was delicious

Me: It was indeed

I said that while sipping on my wine..

He looked at me..

Him: Funi can you function without alcohol?

Aphiwe was sitting on his High chair

Me: Excuse me?

Him: Can you function without alcohol?

Me: What's that supposed to mean?

Him: You a drunk Funi, you need help..

Woow!! That was uncalled for...

Me: You know what Zuko if I'm not perfect for you, I'll just leave

Him: i never said that

Me: You didn't have too

I took my phone and started texting Jozi that she should pick me up, i was tired of Zuko..

Him: Who are you texting?

Me: My cousin.. I'm done Zuko

He laughed, but it wasn't a friendly laugh..

Him: No we done.. When i say so

I stood up and took my phone, then started walking to the door...

Him: Funi..

I stopped and looked at him..

Him: My wife did a mistake of walking out of that door, don't do the same mistake..

I stood there looking at him...

Me: Are you threatening me?

Him: I think you should just come back and we'll continue eating dinner like one big happy family..

I looked at him, something wasn't right with this guy...

[04/14, 13:37] Ron: PART 22 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I had everything of mine packed. I was at the kitchen waiting for Jozi to come and fetch me. I was tired of Zuko, i am not gonna beg him to love me, i am not gonna beg him to appreciate me.. Yes i love him, But his love to me always hurts and i have put up with him it's enough now. I will not stay in a diseased relationship, with Zuko being a flash eating bacteria...

So there i was waiting for Jozi, i was pacing up and down at the kitchen. I had changed my pjs, i was wearing my tracksuit and sneakers....

Zuko was standing at the doorway that separated the kitchen from the lounge, he had his arms folded and was just looking at me. He was giving me a cold stare, that came from a cold heart which sent shivers down my spine. I won't lie, i was starting to get scared of Zuko..

I don't know what this guy is about and quite frankly i don't wanna know, all i know is that i need to get out of there...

My phone rang at that instant making me jump, i looked at it and it was Jozi.. I cleared my throat then answered.

Me: Jo.. Jozi

Her: We at the gate where are you? Open?

Me: Okay.

I hunged up my phone and went to the monitor, It was next to Zuko..

As i was approaching it, my heart was busy skipping a bit every 2 seconds, my knees were wobbly at some point i thought i was gonna fall..

I got to the monitor, and before i could stretch my arm to press that button, Zuko lifted his and i ducked. I really thought that he was gonna Hit me but he was reaching for the monitor and pressed the button.....

I swear whatever that was happening with Zuko, he needed serious help...

I went to stand where i was standing, i needed to stand a bit far from him..

I was relieved when the door opened, and my cousin walked in with Zakes.. I didn't waste time i ran up to her and hugged her tight..

Her: What's wrong sweetie?

Me: Just get me out of here

Her: Oh my God you Shaking.

She broke the hug, and looked at Zuko..

Her: What the hell did you do to my cousin you dog??

Jozi was angry, she just wanted to go up to him and probably strangle him to death, but i stopped her...

Me: He is not worth it Jozi let's go!

Zuko looked at us, he sent out a laugh..

Him: Khawu buze yona le cousin yakho ukuba kuqhubeka ntoni? (ask your cousin what's going on)

Zakes: i think we should go ladies..

Jozi was very angry, she didn't wanna hear anything..

Her: Stay away from my cousin you hear me?? Play very far from her!! (shouting)

Zuko didn't flinch, he was not intimidating he just stood there and laughed at us as if like we were crazy...

Zakes got my bag and we all walked out to their car, and drove to Jozi's place..

I was very quiet in the car, i didn't have anything to say. I was busy thinking of Zuko, although he is a Bastard but I love him. I truly love him.....

We got to Jozi's place and Zakes Went to put my bag in the guest room while Jozi made me some camomile tea to calm me down... She came with the tray and sat opposite me..

Me: Thank you

She exhaled...

Her: i feel like I'm partially responsible for all of this..

I shook my head while sipping on my cup of tea...

Me: It's not your fault.. You didn't force me to date Zuko

Her: What really happened? You sounded soo distressed on the phone and very upset..

Me: Something is wrong with Zuko

Her: is it the drugs?

I shook my head no..

Me: There's just some coldness covering his heart, his heart is cold as Ice..

Jozi: Did he hurt you in anyway?

Me: No.. He didn't hurt me i just don't feel like we are meant for each other. It's like Zuko doesn't

care about anyone but himself, his family is the same as him there's just some dark cloud hanging over on the Mqela family..

I looked at her...

Me: Did i tell you that he won't be going to his brother's wedding on Saturday?.

Her: Why?

Me: He said "You might be working and you can't ask for a day off while you just started at work"

Jozi: Pssshhh that's some straight up bull!.

Me: all i know is that, i don't wanna be a part of some Bullshit issues between him and his family..

She stretched out her hand to touch mine..

Her: i have always known Zuks had issues but i didn't know they were that deep

Me: How much do you know?

Her: Nothing much just that he was taking drugs to help him deal with his wife's death..

Now i wanted to tell Jozi about what Zuko said but i didn't want Jozi to freak out, he probably was just threatening me..

Jozi: Girl let's go to bed it's late..

Me: I'm gonna need you to drop me off at work in the morning, can't afford to be late my boss is psycho..

Her: congrats on your new job girl

She gave me a high 5...

Me: Thank you..

We both stood up and went to our bedrooms to sleep..

Halfway through my sleep i heard the window breaking, i jumped out of the bed in terror and screaming..

It sounded more like a heavy object was thrown against the window..

It didn't take long for Jozi to bust in my bedroom.. She was fastening her robe..

Her: What's wrong? What happened?

Me: i don't i think someone threw something against the window..

She switched on the light as we checked what happened and we found out that a brick was the one that was thrown..

Jozi: Who would do something like this? And where is security?? How did this person even get in our yard.

Me: i don't know

This was just making no sense..

PART 22 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:37] Ron: PART 23 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

It was a new day, and i was at work. I was standing at my counter thinking about the events of last night, the brick being thrown through the window as i was sleeping..

I did expect Zuko, i mean it has to be him because this attack happened right after i left him.....

Zelda came to me as i was standing there and thinking..

Her: Funi..

I didn't hear until she hit the counter, i jumped a little..

Her: Where is your mind?

I contained myself and looked at her..

Mina: i.. I am sorry.. I just..

Her: Don't just stand there and look pretty, fill up!!!

When she says "fill up" she means that i must display jewellery in those empty spaces where jewellery was bought. I didn't wanna argue with her, so i went to the safe and got a few rings...

After getting those rings from the safe, i went to display them...

Although i was keeping myself busy with work, but i couldn't stop thinking about what had happened. Questions such as am i safe arose, will Zuko hurt me? What did he do to his wife? Am i also in danger? I just had too many questions and insufficient answers.....

I was sitting on a small chair, as i was busy putting those rings on the ring stands. You start of with an expensive one, put it on a large stand. Then after you put the next one on an average stand, and the cheapest you put it on a small stand...

As i was busy doing my work, i heard someone singing behind me. It was a voice that i was very familiar with...

Voice: "If i ever said I'm never scared, just know i mean it... If i ever said i fucked your bitch, just know i mean it.. And if i ever said I'm getting money, just know i mean.. And oh oh oh Lord knows, he knows i mean it"....

My heart started beating very very fast, my bladder got very hot as if like my urine was burning me....

Turning around to look at that person took me more than i anticipated, but finally I did and our eyes met. I stared deep in those eyes that reflected a cold heart.. No one said anything for a while, and i noticed that i was alone in the floor. Zelda was probably doing filling at the back, I have no idea where Natalie was...

I slowly stood up, with my knees Shaking..

Me: Wha.. Ca... Can i help you?

He was leaning on my counter, he was wearing one of his expensive flashy suits..

He looked at me for almost like 2min before saying anything...

Him: There's some icon bracelet i would like to see

Me: I'll be with you..

I closed the display glass and we walked to the icon jewellery..

I opened the glass, while he was standing behind me, he was standing very close to me i could even feel his warm breath against my neck...

Me: Which one would you like to see?

I was talking but, i couldn't hear myself..

He whispered in my ear, with that smooth seductive voice..

Him: The Gold one..

I stretched my hand and got it for him. I turned around to give it to him, and we were now facing each other..

Me: here you go..

He took it from my hand and looked at it..

Him: How much is it?

Me: i think R1 400..

Him: i guess it will do..

He then looked around..

Him: And give me that Gold tempo watch

I locked the glass and went to get him the watch too which was R7 99, then we went to the counter so that he could pay..

Him: cash or account?

Him: cash

He took out his platinum card..

I rang his items for him, and he swiped his card to close the transaction..

Him: i would like you to wrap them for me..

Me: Okay.. Do keep in mind that the watch has a 3 Year guarantee, if anything happens to it you can just return it..

He nodded his head while looking at me..

After finishing with his transaction, and him signing the receipts i Walked up to the other glass to wrap for him.. He came closer and was starring at me. I was very nervous, in fact i was even Shaking...

Natalie walked in as i was trying to wrap those items..

Natalie: need some help?

Me: Please..

I stepped back, as she came to wrap for me.. She looked at Zuko.

Her: Morning Zuko

He put his hands in his pockets..

Him: Natalie

Natalie continued wrapping the watch and bracelet nicely.....

After a few seconds, the back office door opened and Zelda walked out holding some papers..

Her: Funi i wa..

She stopped when she saw Zuko...

Her: Zuks what a surprise, are you here to see Funi?

Him:No.. As a matter of fact, I'm here to see

She smiled..

Her: Ohw

I saw Natalie rolling her eyes..

Her: Well it's 11:00 so I'll go on lunch now,let me get my purse..

Zuko: I'll be waiting..

They both smiled at each other, they were also communicating with their eyes.. You could clearly see that something was going on between them...

Zelda then looked at me.

Her: Please sign this papers for me, i will file them when i get back

Me: Yes Tannie

She then walked to the back. Zuko was still smiling but as soon as his eyes moved from Zelda and looked at me, his smile vanished..

I was now scared again, so i looked down..

When Natalie was done with wrapping, she went and put them in a plastic and handed them to him..

Her: Here you go

Him: Thank you Natalie..

Natalie: Its my job..

Natalie then made her way to me and we stood there side by side looking at Zuks, and he was starring back....

Zelda broke the ice when she walked in the room from the back office...

Her: We can go

Zuko: Okay

He looked at me,then put the plastic ontop of the glass..

Him: This is for your father, tell him i said welcome home..

Me: Excuse me?

He looked at Zelda..

Him: Ready to go?

Zelda: Yes i am...

He put his hand around her waist and they walked out...

Natalie clicked her tongue..

Natalie: i wish he could just drop dead!

Me: What did he mean by saying i should tell my father "Welcome home"

Natalie: i have no idea

I took that plastic and Walked up to my counter. I then took the land line phone and called my father, he answered on the 3rd ring..

Him: Hello

Me: Papa

Him: Funi?

Me: Yes it's me..

Him: How is your new job?

Me: How did you know?

Him: Zuko told me about it..

Me: Zuko came to visit you?

Him: He was the one who drove me from the hospital to home, i got discharged today. He told me you couldn't visit because you have a new job

Me: He did?

Him: Yes. You know Funi, i think i misjudged him..

Me: Papa..

Him: He wants to pay lobola for you..

My jaw dropped on the floor when i heard that.

PART 23 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:37] Ron: PART 24 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I was very surprised at what my father was telling me. I know Zuko is crazy, but he cannot be this crazy. This was just insanity on another level...

After talking to my dad, I hunged up and called Zuko immediately, and he answered..

Him: Hello

Me: Zuko it's me

Him: You miss me that much?

Me: Don't flatter yourself.

Him: Then what is it?

Me: Zuko i just called my father

Him: That's a good thing to check up on your Father..

Me: He told me that you want to pay lobola.

Him: Ohw yes..

Me: Don't you think that you should've discussed it with me?

Him: i don't have to discuss it with you, i am not paying lobola to you. Your Father is the one who should decide..

Me: Zuko what do you think this is?

Him: What are you on about?

Me: us? What do you think this is?

Him: us is a couple that's what i think of us..

Me: Zuko we broke up!!

Him: You broke up with Me! I didn't break up with you! So technically we are still a couple because i am not done with you. Now stop annoying me and do what's right, before its too late..

He hunged up the phone after saying that..

I really do not know what goes down in that man's head!

I continued doing my work, which was handling a few repairs for customers. As much as our store sells jewellery and cellphones, we also do repairs..

We do not do repairs inside the store though, we send whatever you want us to repair, to the relevant workshop. For instance if you want us to repair a tempo watch, then we will have to

send it to Tempo workshops. Tempo watches have a guarantee of 3 years, so a customer doesn't have to pay if they produce their guarantee card. If the guarantee has expired then the customer will have to pay for the repair...

Zelda walked in as i was busy writing a customer's repair. She looked like a wreck, as if like she was attacked and raped. Her blouse was Torn, her hair was a mess it just didn't make sense on how she looked...

She didn't say a word to us, she walked straight to the back office. Natalie and i looked at each other wondering what was wrong.....

It was my turn to go to lunch, so i went to the back office to inform Zelda that I'm going out for lunch... I opened the door and she jumped in Terror. She only relaxed when she saw that it's me..

Her: Ohw Its you Funi.

She looked like she had been crying, i could clearly still see the tears in her eyes. I stood there for at least a minute just looking at her and the state that she was in..

She had red marks around her neck, she had a few bruises on her arms and her lower lip was bleeding..

Me: uhm Tannie i just wanted to inform you that I'm going for lunch

Her: Its fine.

I took my purse and went to kfc to get me some Streetwise two chips..

I wish i could just know what happened to Zelda, she really didn't look okay something just wasn't right.....

I got my meal, then sat down and ate..

When i was done eating, i decided to go and do some window shopping because i had 10 minutes left of my lunch...

I went back to work at 13:00 and to my surprise Natalie was alone, because i had gone to put my purse at the back and there was no sign of Zelda and her bag. After putting my purse in my bag, i went to stand with Natalie at her counter..

Me: Where is boss lady?

She exhaled showing some signs of exhaustion..

Her: she went home.

Me: i didn't expect her to stay, i mean she doesn't look well..

Natalie gave me a weird look.

Natalie: ive seen this many times

Me: her being attacked?

Her: Girl stop being a mess, that bitch wasn't attacked by someone she doesn't know.

I looked at her ngoba ngathi uza ne Ndaba..

She stopped what she was doing, and then looked at me..

Her: Zuks did it

Me: Zuko attacked her?

Natalie: Yes he did

Me: Why would he do that? I mean they went out of here all lovey dovey

Her: You can never know what goes down in Zuko's mind.

I was shaken by what i heard. I cannot consider this gossip anymore, because the first time she told me things about Zuko they turned out to be true...

Her: Let me go and get something to eat, but I'll eat at the back office because i can't leave you here alone for too long..

Me: Its okay girl

She went to the back office, took her purse and Walked out to get herself something to eat....

The shop was very quiet, the wasn't any customers coming in other than those ones who just came in to look around and not buy anything.....

So while it was still quite like that, i decided to do a little bit of some research on "manic depression"..

I went to Wikipedia because it's a source that i trust.. I know that anyone can just upload anything on Wikipedia, but then whatever information that you upload you have to provide references you cannot just upload anything that is not referenced.....

I went to read through about it, and it was shocking what i found. I had found that "manic depression" is actually a bipolar disorder...

Now i know bipolar to be a very serious mental disorder, and if Zuko has it and doesn't take medication for it then that is a serious problem...

A few questions circled in my mind, the major one being why isn't Zuko taking medication for his sickness, because if it's not controlled it could possibly lead to deadly consequences....

Natalie and i worked thorough that day. It only started getting busy at around 15:00 until closing

time..

I always look forward to closing time, although my job pays a pretty good salary but the workload is just crazy.....

Natalie and i cashed up, and did everything that we were supposed to do before we left, then at around 17:05 we locked up and went....

I rushed to get a taxi, i just wanted to get home and relax...

It didn't take me that long to get a taxi, and before i knew it i was at Jozi's place..

I figured out that it would be better if i could just go home right away, because my father would need someone to take care of him especially now that his out of the hospital he will need help....

I called Jozi and told her that i am going home, and she didn't have a problem with that so i took my things and went...

I got home at around 19:00 my father was very happy to see me and i was happy to see him too. I was also happy to see that he was better, he did look better i guess government hospitals are not that bad after all...

Me: You look great dad

Him: i had to pull through

Me: i am happy that you are recovering very well..

He went to sit down on the couch.

Him: as a matter of fact i am.

Me: That's a good thing

Him: it is

I took off my shoes and sat down too..

Him: You have just missed your boyfriend, he was here

Me: Again?

Him: Yes. We were discussing the state of my health

I sat up straight and looked at him..

Him: He has decided to get me a heart specialist from overseas to come and look at my case

Me: He what?

Him: He said American specialists are the best

Why is Zuko doing All of this now?

Me: Dad don't you think..

Him: i know what i thought of him the first time but i might have been wrong about him..

Ohhh i wish he knew the real monster behind Zuko..

PART 24 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/14, 13:37] Ron: PART 25 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I didn't know that Zuko can be this low. Lobola like really now??....

It was a Saturday morning when i woke up. I was happy because on weekends we knock off early, we knock off at 13:00. When i knock off from work, i am gonna go to Jozi's place because my Grandma was coming to visit for a weekend and we don't get along at all. I get alot of stress from work, and i wasn't up for the stress that she was gonna give me too.. I had packed a few clothes because i was gonna come back home Monday after work, and Sunday I'm off too. Jozi and i had planned a road trip nyana, we gonna Hit the road when we knock off from work with a few friends of hers....

After preparing for work, i ate breakfast then hugged my father and left for work..

I was seriously looking forward to the road trip i mean it's something that i truly need right now In my life, especially with everything that has been happening with Zuko...

I was in the taxi when my phone rang, i looked at it and it was Zuko i didn't answer at all..

I have decided not to entertain Zuko, i have Decided to give him Zero attention maybe that will make him back off because sometimes when you entertain someone they think that you still wanna fuck with them....

I got to work at 8:45 and Natalie was waiting for me at the door so that we could open. One of the company rules is that you not allowed to open the store alone, because if something happens then you won't be able to get help..

Natalie opened the door and went in while i waited outside for her to turn off the alarm system..

When she had done turning it off, i went in and we dropped down the door...

Me: i am so happy that we gonna work half day today..

Her: and I'm more happy that Zelda won't be coming to work today..

Me: Really?

Natalie: She's still shaken about what happened yesterday..

Me: Why doesn't she have him arrested once and for all?

She looked at me as if like she didn't believe i just said that..

Her: You don't get it do you?

Me: Get what?

Her: When you with Zuks there is no way out, you can't be free until he decides that his done with you...

Me: You know what's the problem?

Her: What?

Me: People are scared of him that is why he does such things.. If only someone could just stand their ground everything will be fine..

Natalie: You really do not know Zuks sweetie i feel for you..

Me: Whatever girly...

I wasn't gonna be shaken by Zuko. He hasn't done anything to hurt me so i am not gonna give in to fear and show him that I'm scared, instead i am gonna stand my Ground and let him not intimidate me...

Working with Natalie was very nice, we played music and just continued working peacefully..

Natalie went out to the bathroom and i decided to fill up a few bracelets in that display tray...

I was singing in a low voice and just thinking about the road trip, I really looked forward to it...

I would keep on turning my head around just to see if there's not any customers coming in, then i would go back to what i was doing..

Me: "Sobe ndimfumane omunye ondiphambanisa nje ngawe.. Wena uphethe intliziyo yami Ohh lalala"

I then heard a voice behind me that i didn't wanna hear..

Voice: "i have been calling you"

I turned around and looked at him. He was standing there with Aphiwe in his arms...

Me: And I've been working..

He looked at me for almost 2min without Saying a word. I didn't know what he was thinking, i didn't know what he was feeling he portrayed no emotions...

He then started laughing, like he seriously laughed and i didn't find anything funny with what i said..

Him: So now you can stand up to me, i admire the courage...

Me: What do you want Zuko?

Him: What's this i hear about you going on a road trip? Who approved that??

Me: Who app... Excuse me? Am i hearing you right huh?

Him: You gonna get drunk, you gonna be out of control which is going to make it easy for this low scumbags to prey on you!!

Wow he really is losing it...

Me: We are not in a relationship!!!! (shouting)..

My shout was soo loud that it made Aphiwe cry, Zuko started rocking him trying to calm him down...

He then looked at me, giving me that cold stare of his...

Him: You shall never raise your voice at me, especially in the presence of my son!!

Zuko was really frustrating me..

Me: Am i supposed to get a restraining order now, is that what it is?

Him: Funi i am trying to be very easy about this, but your stubbornness and your little temper tantrum is only gonna piss me off... I exhaled trying to calm myself down...

Me: Zuko what is it that you want?

Him: When are we getting married? When are you gonna be Mrs Mqela?

I giggled a little..

Me: You really not together upstairs are you?

Him: Are you calling me crazy?

Me: You are crazy!!!

Him: Don't ever call me crazy!!!!!!

That truly spiked a nerve....

Natalie: What is going on here?

I didn't realise that Natalie was now back...

Me: Can we maybe call security or something because this gentleman is harassing me..

Natalie got the phone..

Natalie: i have been always wanting to do this..

Zuko: There's no need for that..

He then looked at me.....

Him: Sizakuhlangana Funi noba kusenkungwini!

After saying that he walked out. Natalie put the phone down...

Natalie: What was that all about?

Me: i have no idea

Her: i was looking forward to having him dragged out of here by security..

I laughed..

Me: You are cruel!

She laughed too...

Natalie and i worked thorough that day peacefully. After defeating Zuko like that, i felt like i had conquered the world.....

It was now finally 13:00 i cashed up my till immediately i didn't want any hold ups because i was looking forward to the road trip...

Natalie and i did everything that we were supposed to do then we locked up and went.....

I went to my usual spot and waited for a taxi.. A white Quantum stopped and i hopped in.. There wasn't alot of passengers in it, just a guy and some woman then the driver.. I sat down.

Me: Centurion please

Driver: Alright my sister..

I texted Jozi while the taxi drove off that I'm on my way home, i just knocked off....

After texting her, i put my phone away and just stared out of the window all smiling...

The guy and the lady started talking behind me..

Lady: That moment when someone is kidnapped and they don't even know it..

Guy: Sometimes courage gets you nowhere

That was a rather strange conversation...

Lady: I can imagine someone telling someone else that they are crazy..

Driver: She must be shown what crazy people do..

The driver took off their hat, and shit it was Zuko!!

I tried standing up but it was late, the guy was on my seat holding a gun against my abdomen area..

Him: Let's try and Behave..

It dawned on me that i am in deep waters..

PART 25 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:36] Ron: PART 26 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We got to some abandoned cabin in the middle of nowhere. They had blind folded me so that i couldn't see the way leading to the cabin..

I was very hurt by what Zuko was doing, i was very hurt that he would go to this great lengths in forcing me to marry him...

My phone had been taken away from me, my everything was just taken away from me preventing me to have any communication with the outside world...

When we got to the cabin, Zuko had me tied to the chair which was in the middle of the living room..

The other 2 companions had been dismissed by Zuko, so it was just me and him left in the cabin. The cabin wasn't bad, it was small and very clean the furniture was vintage and it was perfectly placed in its place..

Zuko locked the door after his companions had left and then he punched in some code in the monitor next to the door. He then took a deep breath, turned around and looked at me..

I was sitting there crying, i was thinking more about what this will do to my father i mean his heart is not strong enough to take this..

Zuko stood against the door with his hands folded, and he was just looking at me...

Him: I'm not gonna hurt you Funi, so can you please stop crying..

He really wanted me to believe him? I mean this guy kidnapped me and here i am now tied to a

chair and his talking about he is not going to hurt me..

Me: What do you want from me?

He walked up to the cupboards, and took out what looked like pills..

Him: i just want you to love me..

I do love him, but i don't love the person that he is...

He took out a glass and poured water, then started drinking those pills... I noticed that it was his "manic depression pills", i have seen this pills before..

Him: i have Decided that we gonna stay here in this cabin, until we fix our relationship and until you are ready to marry me..

Why is me marrying him soo important to him?

Me: Why do you wanna Marry me soo bad?

Him: Because i love you that bad, and i am scared of losing you.

Me: So you think that kidnapping me will help the situation?

He looked down without saying a word..

Me: Is that what you do to people that you love? Kidnap them, and then tie them up???

He hit the counter in frustration..

Him: No dammit!!! (shouting)

He looked at me through that hat, that almost covered his eyes entirely and tried to contain himself...

Him: Funi please..

I didn't say anything.

Him: Okay fine if i untie you, do you promise that you going to behave?

I didn't answer that...

He walked closer to me, then stood at the back of the chair and started untying me....

My wrists were painful, he had fasten the ligature too tight...

I stood up and looked at him, i had this cloud of Anger hanging over me and without even thinking about it i slapped him across the face...

Me: You are sick Zuko!!!!

I could see that at that very moment, he felt like jumping on me and strangling me to death, but he tried so very hard to contain himself.....

I sat down on the couch and started crying with my hands covering my face, i was Torn by what was happening.....

He came and sat next to me, then put his arm around my shoulders but i yanked it off...

Me: Don't touch me!!

He forced his arm around my shoulders again and then pulled Me closer to him...

Him: I'm sorry.

Me: Let me go home..

Him: i will let you go home when the time is right..

I was crying with my head laid on his shoulder and his arm around me, i don't know what Zuko really wants from me...

I opened my eyes and realised that i was nicely laid on the couch, with a soft pillow under my head and a warm fluffy blanket over me... The weather was very personal outside, it was cold and raining plus it was worse because we were in the woods next to the mountains making it more cold...

It was very warm inside the cabin I think it was because of the fireplace. I got up and sat up straight, then i saw Zuko at the kitchen looked like he was cooking..I cleared my throat, he turned around and looked at me...

Him: You awake..

I yawned and stretched myself, i must've passed out from all that crying...

Him: i am making chilli tomato soup, we gonna eat it with Rolls..

He was serious about what he was doing even had a cloth hanging over his shoulder..

I realised that busy asking him to let me go, or what he wants from me is a total waste of time. This guy is probably never letting me go...

Him: Don't you wanna take a warm bath perhaps while i finish off here?

Me: You know what i want?

Him: Yea?

He said that while stirring the tomato soup in that pot..

Me: It is to go home..

That hit him hard because he stopped stirring the pot for a few seconds, then continued stirring again...

Him: Bunju We have already discussed this..

I got up from the couch and Walked up to him..

Me: Let me go Zuko!!

He closed the pot and switched off the stove then looked at me, Ohhh Lord he still looked cute as hell especially with that hat covering half of his face and that line in the middle of his chin.. Lord what drives such a cute guy to do such!!

I had started being emotional again...

Him: No don't do that please..

He tried holding me but i pushed him off..

Me: Take me home!!!! (shouting)

Him: Funi..

I started hitting him on his chest,while crying...

Me: Take me home zuko.. Take me home (Crying)..

He held my hands tight, then pulled Me closer to him and hugged me tight,he didn't say anything he just held me tight....

After a while i separated from him.

He Stretched his hand and wiped my tears.

Him: You don't ever get tired of crying neh?

I didn't answer him..

Him: i will take you home i promise..

I looked at him, his eyes were sincere he did sound Truthful about what he was saying.....

Him: Can you just trust me?

I continued looking at him without saying anything.. He came closer and started kissing me. As much as i wanted to punch him, i couldn't it was like he had put a spell on me...

I loosened up and let him put his hands under my shirt, he gently ran his hands on my body.....

Him: i love you Bunju..

He said that while still kissing me..

Me: i love you too..

Was i being crazy?

[04/15, 10:40] Ron: PART 27 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Zuko and i stayed in that Cabin for almost a week. I saw a side to him that i didn't know existed, or maybe the pills were the ones that made him this mental stable and calm I really didn't know. But what i know, is that i love this gentleman and sweet side of him..

As much as we wanted to stay in that Cabin for a while longer, but we needed to go back to our lives. We have responsibilities and we cannot ignore that...

I didn't know how Zelda was gonna react to Me missing work for a week, i mean i need this job more than anything and i cannot have her firing me.....

We drove back home later that day, and when i say home i mean my home. We wanted to discuss the lobola thing with my Father. Yes! I had agreed to marry him..

We got home and my father was doing the Garden outside, i was happy to see him this better, it has been a while since he did his garden or any work around the house....

When he saw us, he stopped what he was doing and looked at us. I didn't know what i was going to say to him because i hadn't called him for the time being that i was in that Cabin...

Zuko: i brought him safe and sound..

My father looked at me..

Him: i can see that...

He put the spade down, and wiped off the sweat from his forehead...

Me: You knew where i was?

Him: Oh yes, Zuko told me that you two wanted to spend some time alone..

I looked at Zuko, then i looked at my father again..

Me: Yeah we.. We wanted to have some time alone..

Dad: So did you enjoy yourself?

Me: Yes i did..

Dad: Then I'm happy...

He went inside the house then came back with two chairs for him and Zuko..

Me: I'll go and make us something to drink.

Dad: i would like some green tea

Zuko: a glass of water will be fine for me..

Me: coming right up..

I went inside and got them their drinks, then i went and gave them..

Me: Papa, Me and Zuko wanted to discuss the lobola thing with you..

He put his cup down back on the tray..

Zuko: We..we were wondering if we could start with the negotiations a bit soon...

My father looked at us..

Him: You guys are serious about this?

We looked at each other, then looked at him...

Me: Yes we are..

Dad: i never thought this day would come.

Zuko: You mean that in what way?

Dad: ive always wanted Funi to remain my little girl, but i guess age caught up with her. Look at you, you are about to be someone's wife....

I also never thought this day would come, marriage was the last thing on my mind...

Me: i also didn't think this day would come..

He exhaled and looked at Zuko..

Dad: i would like to meet with your family first..

Zuko choked on his water and started coughing.. I went and pat him on his back..

Me: Are you alright?

He nodded his head yes..

Dad: i think it would be a good idea if we all met up over dinner. I wanna know the kind of family that my daughter is gonna be married off too...

That topic really didn't sit well with Zuko...

Him: i am not sure about that.. My family is always busy. My mother is always travelling, my

brother is a doctor he is always at work and my little sister is also chasing after her own dreams...

Dad: What about your Father?

Zuko squeezed that glass hard that it almost broke while grinding his teeth. Then after a few seconds he calmed himself...

Him: My father is not in my life..

Dad: He is no more?

Him: No, he.. He just was never in my life...

Dad: I'm sorry to hear that..

Zuko: Its fine you i kinda got use to it..

He looked at his watch..

Zuko: Unfortunately i have to go, i need to catch up with my work.

He stood up...

Dad: You will tell me when your family is ready to meet up..

He nodded his head..

Dad: Let me get back to my garden, i guess I'll see you around Zuko..

Zuko: i guess so too.....

I went to put the Glass and the mug inside the house then came back and Walked Zuko to his car...

Me: i am sorry if my father's questions were uncomfortable for you..

Him: It's alright Bunju, he is trying to look out for you..

I did find it a bit strange that Zuko hasn't asked me to meet his mother. I mean he has met my father, i would really like it if i met his mother too...

Me: i would really like to meet your mother though, she seems like a good person..

Him: Ya i will call her and ask her if she's not busy this weekend, then you and your Father can meet her..

I smiled at him..

Me: i can't wait..

He smiled at Me too..

After Zuko left i didn't do much, I just slept the whole day. I woke up later and cooked, after cooking i sat and watched TV until i went to bed. It was a boring day i won't lie.....

The following day i woke up and prepared for work. I was s bit scared of how Zelda was going to react i mean i missed work for a week without any logical explanation. I just hope that she will be lenient and not fire me at least give me a warning.....

When i was done preparing for work, i ate breakfast then went and got a taxi to work..

I got to work at around 8:30 the door was half open meaning that Zelda and Natalie were already there..

I tooka deep breath and went to knock at the door...

The door opened after 30sec or so, and i Walked in then it closed again...

I slowly made my way to the back office, Zelda was sitting there counting some money..

Me: Good morning Tannie..

She looked at me and then put the money away..

Her: put your bag away and go fill up, we have new watches that arrived yesterday..

So just like That? No yelling? No nothing..

I didn't wanna give her a reason to change her mind so i went and put my bag away then started with what she told me to do..

PART 27 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:41] Ron: PART 28 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Saturday finally came. Zuko had set up a meeting between his family and my family. His family slept over at his place, they arrived yesterday. For the fact that everyone in his family decided to put everything aside to come down here and meet me, it was a huge deal for me..

I won't lie as much as i looked forward into meeting them, but i was scared at the same time because Zuko comes from a very successful and educated family.. His big brother is a General practitioner, i heard his wife is a clinical psychologist and His mother, well his mother has a PhD. She is a businesswoman, she is also a philanthropist. And i am just a mere sales person assistant.

On my side i was taking along my father and Jozi. I have to have Jozi there, she will make me less nervous....

We were to meet up at La'Aquell some 5 star hotel just a bit outside of pta..

I was wearing a purple dress that was a bit below my knee level, and i had on purple heels.. I had covered my hair with a purple shawl, heard Zuko's mother is a bit old fashioned and Traditional..

I couldn't stop Shaking, i was very scared i mean who wouldn't be in this situation..

I was driving up there with Jozi and my father. We were taking Jozi's car, Zakes was also tagging along you know to make the atmosphere less intense..

As we were driving there, we kinda got lost a bit here and there that's when i called Zuko and he directed us..

Zakes was driving, my father was sitting at the front seat and i was sitting at the back with Jozi, i think she saw that i was scared. She held my hand...

Her: Just relax babe

Me: Its that evident here I'm scared?...

Her: Ofcourse it is. Now relax babe I'm sure they are good people..

Me: i hope so too...

I was starring out of the window, it was dark outside and i was praying that tonight goes well..

I love Zuko, and he loves me too. So i pray this goes well.

We finally arrived at the hotel, we parked not that far from the entrance..

We got out of the car and made our way to the entrance.. I was holding Jozi's hand tight, that is how scared i was...

I got a bit relieved when i saw Zuko waiting for us at the entrance i ran up to him and hugged him..

Him: You are Shaking what's wrong?

Me: i am very nervous...

We broke the hug and i was already teary..

Him: Calm down you going to cause yourself an unnecessary panic attack..

Me: I'll try to calm down..

He went on to greet my father and Jozi.

Zuko: Thank you for supporting Funi..

Jozi: We family, we supposed to support her.. And just so you know if one of your family members slays on Funi.. Man i don't wanna see what's gonna go down in there..

Zuko: i believe you..

Jozi: You should, because i keep a sniper in my car and I'm not talking about Wesley..

We all laughed.. I was happy that i brought Jozi along, her presence just relaxes me a bit. Zuko held my hand..

Him: Are you ready to go in?

I took a deep breath and nodded my head...

Me: Yes i am..

We all walked in and some lady was waiting for us just by the entrance who led us to the dinning Hall.. I am not gonna lie, this place was out of this world. It was very beautiful and everything was set up perfectly. The colours that were used mostly at the dinning table was Peach and white, it was pretty..

We weren't the only People there, there was also a few guests mostly being white people...

We got to our table, and his family was already sitting there...

His mother and his Brother they had the looks, they were beautiful just like Zuko.. His mother was wearing some traditional clothing, something that Nigerian women would wear, but hers was more beautiful and stylish.. Zuko's sister in law was wearing like a real Xhosa bride, she also had on some traditional clothing which made me the odd one out...

Before we took out seats Zuko introduced us, i could see that he was also a bit nervous...

Zuko: Funi that is my mom Bongji, that is my brother Loyiso and his wife Noluvuyo....

I greeted them the best way i know how and that I with respect, and they greeted me back..

Zuko: This is funi's father uTat'hlangu, that is her cousin Jozi and that is Zakes he is married to Jozi..

We all greeted each other, hugs and handshakes were exchanged and after we took our seats..

After a few seconds of us sitting down, the waiters brought us some juice. It looked like Guava juice, it also had strawberries and some minty leaves inside.....

Zuko was sitting on my right side, then Jozi was sitting on my left side just how i wanted it..

Zuko took one of the jugs and looked at me..

Him: Should i pour for you?

Me: Yes please..

He poured the juice for me..

Things were really tense, no one was saying anything and i was wishing that the ground could open up so i could get buried inside...

Zuko decided to break the ice after a few seconds..

Zuko: i would like to thank everyone for coming to support me and Funi. Especially you mama, i know that you were supposed to be doing one of your seminars at Durban but you decided to be here instead. That means alot to me, thank you..

She smiled at his son..

Her: Anything for my son..

Maybe his mother is not bad after all, maybe she is a good person that I always see on Tv.. She then looked at me.

Her: So Funi, you look like a decent young woman. Zuko told me that you were raised very well..

I cleared my throat..

Me: Thank you. And Yes i was raised well, by my father he raised me as a single parent after my mother died..

Her: i am sorry to hear about your mother. And i admire your Father for stepping up to his responsibilities like that, i mean not all men can do that...

Me: Thank you, and i will forever be grateful to him..

She looked at my father and smiled, not only was this woman beautiful but she also had the most beautiful smile i have ever seen...

Her: i admire you Sir for raising such a beautiful young lady..

Dad: Thank you, and i admire you too for raising such a young decent young man. I'm sure it was also not easy being a single parent on your side..

The smile immediately vanished from Bongi's face..

Her: Ohw..

Zuko: i told him that Dad was never around..

She smiled again, but this time around it wasn't a friendly smile..

Her: Wow.. Seems like you have told this people alot about us, and we know less about them..

This people? Like really now??..

Jozi: woowoow (low voice)

Loyiso: i am just sitting here and wondering if she's the reason why you didn't come to my wedding..

Zuko: i didn't come because i was busy..

Loyiso: but again here i am.. I decided to put away my busy schedule to be here for you and you couldn't do the same for me!..

Noluvuyo tried interfering..

Vuyo: Sthandwa khawuyeke Torho.. Yhuu bawo Yintoni kakade (my love can you please stop)..

Loyiso: Yeyake Noluvuyo! Ndifuna uZuko andichazele uku.... (i want Zuko to explain to me why..)

Bongi hit the table which made everyone jump a little..

Bongi: Loyiso khawume (Loyiso wait)..

I was now holding Zuko's hand under the table trying to calm him down because i could clearly see that he was slowly but surely reaching his boiling point...

He looked at me, and i smiled at him. He also forced a smile through that bitter facial expression....

Bongi: Now can everyone calm down and actually talk about why we here..

I was wondering if my father's heart was gonna keep up with all this tension.. 2 waiters made their way to us..

Waiter 1: Good evening, can we bring the starters?

Bongi: Yes please..

Waiter 1: they are on their way..

She then walked up to the kitchen..

Zuko couldn't contain his Anger anymore, he was even sweating..

Him: Can i be excused?

He stood up..

Bongi: Yintoni ngoku? (what's wrong now)

He threw the napkin on the table..

Him: i just need some fresh air..

He kicked the chair out of his way and started walking to the exit..

Me: I'll go and make sure that he is alright..

Bongi: No I'll go..

Me: Its okay i..

Bongi: i said I'll go!!!

Her voice was a bit firm. After realising that she was harsh, she smiled at me..

Her: After all his my son, i carried him for 9 months. I know what to do when throws one of his silly tantrums..

She stood up and looked at us..

Her: Excuse me..

She shifted her chair and Walked out..

The table remained silent and awkward..

Jozi: Cha kudlaliwe ngathi la (they have played with us here)... I might as well go and get me some glass of wine, where is the kitchen?

If it wasn't for my in laws, i would probably be on my 5th glass of wine right now..

PART 28 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:42] Ron: PART 29 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Zuko and his mother came back after a few minutes. Zuko looked a bit calm compared to how he was when he stormed out of the room..

I seriously didn't think that our meeting was going to be like this, it truly was a disaster..

Bongi: i think it's safe to say that, we all got off on the wrong foot here. For all it's worth, and for the sake of peace i apologise for everything that's happened. I think that the most important thing here is Funi and Zuko, let's not ruin this for them...

That was a good speech she gave, for the sake of peace i do hope that we all gonna get along...

The rest of the evening went peacefully, we ate and chatted things were really looking up....

Zuko tapped his glass with a fork and demanded attention... He then held my hand before saying anything...

Him: i wanna thank all of you for coming out here. It really means alot to us. There's one thing that i need to announce..

They all looked at him..

Him: i have Decided that i wanna Marry Funi..

There was a bit of silence for a while...

Bongi: Uhm that is a big decision did you even think about it?

Zuko: Yes i have, and Funi is all that i want..

Bongi: There is completely no rush Zuko you Can just..

Zuko: i have made the decision and i am sticking by it..

They all kept quiet, they looked very speechless..

Loyiso: Funi what is it that you do again?

Me: i..

Everyone was looking at me..

Me: i work at a Sterns jewellery as a sales assistant..

Bongi: Wow...

I don't know if she meant that in a good way, or a disappointing way..

Loyiso: What qualifications do you have?

Me: i.. I only have matric..

Loyiso: You know such jobs are very useless!

Noluvuyo: Loyiso..

Loyiso: Yintoni? Ndithetha inyani nje (what? I am speaking the truth)

Bongi: i think what my son meant was don't you have any goals in life? Was that what you always wanted to do?

Me: No.. Unfortunately after matric my father couldn't send me to tertiary so i had to look for a job,instead of sitting at home..

Jozi: and i admire you for that cousin..

Bongi: What is it that you wanted to do after completing school?

Me: i wanted to study Fashion design..

Loyiso: That is just as useless as what you doing now!

Dad: boy i think you are being out of line now!

Jozi: Way out of line!

Zuko: You know what, I knew this was going to happen!

Bongi: Zuko..

Zuko: No! I am tired of this..

He looked at his mother..

Him: You have controlled us long enough, and it stops now!

He stood up and stretched his hand out to me..

Him: You know what happens when your family doesn't like your girlfriend?

They looked at him..

Him: You dump your family and become an orphan...

He looked at me..

Him: Funi is the only family i need..

That was very emotional.

Him: As long as we have each other and the support of your family, that is that matters

I smiled at him, with tears in my eyes..

Him: Let's get out of here..

Me: Okay..

Jozi started clapping her hands..

Her: You go girl!!

Zuko's family didn't look happy about what Zuko said, and me on the other hand i was very shocked at what he said.....

Zuko and i Walked out of there while holding hands. We walked up to his car, he opened the door for me and i went in while he went to the other side..

Him: Let's get the hell out of her

He started driving off.....

I thought maybe we were gonna go to his place, but we just drove around instead...

Me: Where are we going exactly?

Him: i don't know, but all i know is that i don't wanna go home because they will be there..

Me: You can't ignore them forever

Him: Did you hear what i said back there? I'm done with those people..

Me: They mean well Zuko. I mean you very successful, while me on the other hand I'm just a mere lousy assistant..

He looked at me, then looked at the road..

Him: Are you undermining yourself?

Me: I'm just stating facts

He took my hand and kissed it..

Him: i love you Funi..

Me: i love you too..

Him: Why don't we drive to the cabin?

Me: Sounds tempting but i have work tomorrow. Remember some of us work on Sundays..

Him: You can skip

Me: ive been skipping work alot Zuko i can't skip again..

Him: Its just one fucken day..

Me: And that one day can get me fired..

He kept quiet for a while..

Him: I'll talk to Zelda

Me: Yes you will talk to her vele because you fucking her!!

I seriously don't what led me to say that.. He pulled the car over.

He looked at me.

Him: What the fuck did you just say?

My sweet Zuko was gone, the bipolar monster came back....

I didn't say anything, i was starting to get scared because he was getting angry.. He got of the car and came to my side. Zuko did the unbelievable, he literally broke the window with his elbow and pulled Me out. It was very painful, the broken glasses were cutting me and tearing my dress...

He then went to the car again while i was on the ground. You could probably say that i should've ran away kodwa my mind froze..

He came back with a gun, i found myself Shaking that i literally pissed on myself. I thought Zuko was gonna kill me, but instead he hit me on my head and on my face with the back of his gun. All i remember from the incident was me tasting my own blood because i was bleeding very bad..

PART 29 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:42] Ron: PART 30 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I woke up at the hospital. The first thing i did when i opened my eyes was to thank God that i am alive. I didn't think that i was gonna make it. I could feel that i had a bandage wrapped around my head...

I had an excruciating pain arising from my head, especially when i tried to move it...i looked around and saw my father and Jozi standing there.. .

Me: Papa

He looked at me..

Him: Funi

They both came to me. Jozi stood on my right and my father stood on my left. My left eye was very hard to open, it was half opened compared to my right eye more like it was swollen..

Me: i can't believe that I'm still alive..

I saw tears falling from Jozi's eyes..

Her: You were in a Coma for a while, i thought you were not gonna make it..

Dad: Let me go and get a doctor

He let go of my hand and Walked out....

Me: He tried to kill me Jozi

She put her hand on her chest,while crying..

Her: I'm sorry. I feel responsible for what happened, i mean i am the one who Kept on forcing you to go for him..

Me: Don't ever think that.. It is not your fault..

My father came back with the doctor...

The doctor came straight up to me and started shining some small light in my eyes..

Doc: How are you feeling?

Me: i am in pain especially when i try to move my head..

Doc: How is your vision?

Me: My left eye feels swollen

She waved 2 hands at me..

Her: How many fingers am i holding up?

Me: 2..

Her: Okay.. How many now?

She was waving 4 fingers..

Me: 4

She then looked at me..

Her: You are lucky to be alive...

I was indeed grateful and happy that I was alive..

Her: But you will be happy to know that they arrested the perpetrators who did this to you..

Me: perpetrators?

Her: Yes.. Your boyfriend gave a statement of what happened that night to the police, he also described how the perpetrators looked like and they got them..

Me: There was no perpetrators..

The doctor looked at me.

Doc: i don't understand..

Me: My boyfriend is the one that attacked me that night..

Doc: Why would he lie?

Me: Because he is a sick bastard!.

She just looked at me.

Jozi: Clearly the police have the wrong people..

Doc: Seems like that..

Me: Can i give a statement?

Her: Well yes, but i want you to get better first. You suffered severe head trauma so relax..

Me: i cannot relax Doc knowing that he might come back to finish me!!.

Doc: Please calm down i will get securities to stand by your door and make sure that he doesn't come anywhere near you..

Dad: Thank you Doctor

Doc: but how can he want you dead if his the one who brought you in, his even paying for your hospital bills it just doesn't make sense..

Jozi: Because his feeling guilty..

The doctor looked at Jozi..

Doc: could be..

The doctor focused her attention on me again..

Her: Fine, i will make sure that there's security at your door.. In the meantime i will get a nurse to give you your meds..

She then looked at my father and Jozi..

Her: Please don't keep her up for a long time she has to rest..

Dad: Ofcause..

The doctor walked out...my dad looked at me.

Dad: Well you heard the doctor..

He kissed me on my forehead.

Him: Guess I'll see you tomorrow..

Me: i guess so too..

Jozi hugged me and they left...

After a few minutes of Jozi and my father leaving. The Nurse got in with food and my meds.. It was a he by the way..

Him: How is my new patient?

I looked at him..

Me: I'm getting there, hopefully..

He put the tray next to me..

Him: Sandwich, fruit salad, orange juice?

I looked at the food, it didn't look that bad..

Me: Why not?

He smiled and started feeding me..

Opening my mouth wide was very difficult because of all the bruises in my face..

Him: I'm sorry about what happened to you..

Me: Its okay..

Him: who did this to you?

I took a deep breath..

Me: My boyfriend, but his pinning all of this on innocent people....

He put the bowl of fruit salad back on the tray..

Him: domestic violence is something we cannot run away from. Approximately 1 in every 4 women is killed by their partner..

Me: i am not going to become a static of woman abuse. I will fight to have him locked away for what he did to me..

He smiled at Me..

Him: That's the spirit. And i support you..

Me: Thank you..

I yawned..

Him: Tired?

Me: Ya suddenly i feel so sleepy

He stood up..

Him: Drink your meds so you can sleep

Me: Thank you..

He got me water then I drank my pills and tried sleeping.....

Unfortunately i couldn't sleep, i had this Terrible headache. It was even making me nauseated that i slowly got up and made my way to the bathroom. I was even very dizzy....

I got to the bathroom and started vomiting, after vomiting a few times the Headache was getting better... I rinsed my mouth then opened the door..

As i was about to step out, i saw the doctor standing next to my bed holding a syringe..

Doc: Die little bitch!!

She opened my covers and realised i wasn't there.. She then turned around and saw me Standing at the door of the bathroom..

Her: Its time for you to die!!

I quickly closed and locked the door.. She started banging on it..

Her: Open up!!

I moved backwards, i was scared that i was even Shaking..

Me: What do you want from me??

I won't lie, i was very scared and screaming..

Her: You do not mess with the Mqela family!!

Ohhh Lord What did i get myself into?

PART 30 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:43] Ron: PART 31 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I was still trapped in the bathroom scared as hell. You know when adrenaline creeps in you even forget that you injured. After a while she stopped banging on the door. I was scared to open, what if she's not gone what if she's just standing there again waiting for me to open.....

After approximately 10min there was a knock, my heart skipped a bit again..

Voice: Funeka are you there?

Sounded like the male nurse. I slowly got up and opened, it was the male nurse....

I got out and hugged him..

Him: What's wrong are you okay?

I shook my head no after we had broken the hug..

He walked me to my bed, and i sat there..

Him: What's wrong? You look like you have seen a ghost or something

After i had composed myself and gathered strength, i started talking..

Me: She tried to kill me..

Him: Who tried to kill you?

Me: The Doctor tried to kill me...

Him: Wait, you not making any sense..

As we were talking, the doctor walked in and acted like nothing happened..

Her: How is my patient doing?

I held on to the nurse's hand tight and and i didn't say anything..

She came up to me and Fear just creeped in... She put her hand on my forehead.

Her: i think we should sedate her..

Me: Sedate me for what?

Her: Darling you have been through alot. Sleeping must be bringing you nightmares hey, nightmares of what happened..

Me: i am fine..

She looked at the Nurse..

Her: Get the disposable syringe and the Ampule..

The Nurse looked at me, and then looked at the Doctor..

Nurse: I'm sorry Doc but i think Funi is just fine..

The doctor looked at him, she was starting to get a bit irritated..

Her: I'm sorry the last time i remembered i am the Doctor here, I studied for 6 years..

Nurse: if i remember correctly we mostly sedate agitated and Paranoid patients. Funi looks just fine to me, unless Ofcause you want me to get a second opinion from the other doctors...

She kept quiet for a while. She then smiled, but it was a conniving smile...

Her: Fine i get your point.

She looked at me.

Her: i guess we will see each other tomorrow Funi...

After saying that she walked out.. I looked at the Nurse.

Me: Thank you..

Him: Its okay.

Me: What you did proves to me that you believe me..

He exhaled loudly...

Him: i don't like her. There's something sinister about her. So ya, i believe you..

Me: Thank you..

There's nothing more great as someone believing you..

The Nurse chilled in my ward for the rest of the day, until at night..

Me: Isn't supposed to be the end of your shift?

Him: it is but i cannot leave you alone in this state..

He was soo sweet..

Me: i appreciate that..

Him: i want to get us something to eat, but i don't wanna Leave you alone.

Me: If it's allowed we can go together...

Him: i think that's a good idea..

He helped me get out of bed we walked up to the canteen, and i sat down at the table as he got us something to eat.. The canteen was a bit empty, just a few people were there..

He came back with burgers and cool drinks..

Him: We can't eat here, it's for staff only

Me: Ohw ya

I stood up and we went to my ward..

Him: i figured that you be tired of this hospital food...

Me: i am..

We started eating.. I looked at him..

Me: i didn't get your name...

Him: Marvin, Nurse Marvin Brown..

Me: How did it come about for you to be a nurse?

Him: I wanted to do medicine but unfortunately parents Couldn't afford, so to be in the medical field i went for nursing..

Me: There's no much male nurses

Him: true that..

Me: You not Gay are you?

He laughed..

Him: No I'm straight...

Me: That's good..

My headache started, i closed my eyes..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: This excruciating pain i get in my head has started again..

Him: Let me get you some pain killers...Try taking a few bites and I'll be right back...

Me: Okay

He quickly ran out as i forced myself to eat.....

My biggest fear walked in as i was eating.

Him: Bunju

I swear for a moment everything stopped.. My mind froze i didn't know how to react..

He walked closer and took a seat, he then looked at the food.....

Him: i pay alot of money here for you to get the best and they feeding you this nonsense, this very unhealthy...

My mouth went dry immediately.

Me: What...what are you doing here?

Him: I'm here to see you..

I was panicking, i looked for the panic button and i was about to press it. He came and put his

hand on my mouth..

Him: Let's not overreact

My breathing seized...I then saw Marvin walking in.

Marvin: Hey what are you doing?

Him: Stand where you are

Marvin: I'm calling security

Zuko took out his gum and pointed it at Marvin..

Zuko: Do you know who i am?

Me: Z.. Zuko.. I.

He turned and looked at me..

Him: Shut the fuck up.

He then looked at Marvin..

Him: i never wanna see you in this ward ever again, i will have a new nurse Assigned for me...

Me: Zuko.. Please..

Zuko: Funi i said shut the fuck up! I don't wanna hurt you more than i already did..

Zuko: We will go to the reception and you will tell them that you no longer wanna be Funi's Nurse..

Me: Zuko listen...

Him: Funi i..

Me: Someone tried to kill me..

He lowered his gun and looked at me..

Him: What?

I looked at Marvin as he slowly walked backwards, then i looked at Zuko again...

Me: a Doctor tried to kill me..

Him: Wtf?

All in all i was hoping that Marvin comes back with help soon

PART 31 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:44] Ron: PART 32 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Nurse Brown didn't waste time, he came with 3 securities within the period of 5 min..

Him: Can you please get this man out of here. He is a threat to my patient and he is armed..

They quickly restrained him, he tried putting up a fight but he lost. After restraining him, they walked him out.. Nurse Brown came to me and hugged me.

Him: Did he try to hurt you?

I shook my head no.

Him: Now i can clearly see that you not safe here..

Me: He won't stop until he kills me..

Him: i will always make sure that you are guarded especially when i knock off in the morning. You must always have a guard at your door, and a nurse here in your ward..

Me: Thank you very much..

He sat down..

Him: Was that him?

I nodded my head yes with my eyes closed..

Him: He didn't seem okay to me, i mean who comes at the hospital with a gun..

Me: His bipolar

Him: That is a serious mental disorder is he taking medication for it?

Me: He doesn't drink his pills regularly..

Him: i figured that out..

Me: i wish that he could leave me alone..

He held my hand..

Him: We will make him pay for what he did to you..

I just nodded my head..

Him: Why don't you try to get some rest, i will seat here and guard you..

Me: Won't you get tired?

Him: I'm a Nurse, I'm used to nightshifts..

At least i can sleep peacefully with Nurse Brown there, he is the only one i trust here....

It was hard sleeping. I'd get nightmares of Zuko attacking me that night, it was just crazy...

Nurse Brown sat there and read a Novel while guarding, i also saw a guard standing at the door that made my paranoia a bit better...

I woke up the following morning, and Nurse Brown wasn't around instead i saw a female sitting there..

Me: Where is Nurse Brown?

Her: Nurse Brown went home, he only does nightshifts..

Me: Ohw

Her: i am Melissa and i will be holding in for him, until his nightshift..

The Question is, can i trust her?

Her: Why don't you go and take a shower, and then we'll take it from there..

I got out of bed and went to the bathroom, i made sure that i lock the door I didn't want her creeping up on me.....

After showering, i dried my body, applied lotion and then put on the hospital gown and went back to my bed again...

Melissa had made my bed nicely, then she went to get me breakfast while i laid on the bed..

.

She came back with scrambled eggs, bacon, sausages, and toasted bread with juice on the side...

Her: Brown told me that you don't really like hospital food, so i thought you will probably appreciate this..

Me: Thank you, that's very kind of you...

As i bent down to pick up the juice, i felt the excruciating pain again in my head..

Her: Take it easy..

She laid me back and put the tray on my thighs...

Her: better eat fast before the doctor catches you...

Me: Is it the Female doctor again?

Her: No, Dr Smith is suspended..

Me: What happened?

Her: Thank hospital management saw the footage when she tried to attack you.. She might go to jail for a long time..

Wow that was good to hear..

Me: That's good news

Her: I'm sorry about what happened, we have never had such incidences in this hospital Before..

Me: It was shocking what happened..

The Doctor came to check up on me later. This time it was a he, and he didn't look like he was sent to kill me..

Him: How are you feeling this morning Miss..

She looked at my file....

Him: Miss Funeka

Me: except for the constant sharp pain that i get in my head, I'm fine..

He unrolled the bandage from my head..

Him: The stitches are still intact. I think we shouldn't put the bandage anymore..

I put my hand on my head, i couldn't feel my hair the only thing i felt were a few stitches...

Me: am i bald?

Dr: Yes, but you still look good don't worry

Me: i doubt that..

He looked at me..

Him: You are a survivor of a brutal attack, that makes you beautiful..

I smiled..

Me: Thank you

He looked at the Nurse..

Him: Ibuprofen will be good preferably 400mg.

He put his hand on my forehead...

Him: She doesn't have a fever so i don't think paracetamol will be necessary, plus Ibuprofen is a good analgesic on its own too. And give her some vitamins too..

Melissa: I'm on it doctor

Dr: i will see you tomorrow Miss..

He looked at my file again..

Me: Miss Funeka

Him: it will take me a while to get used to the name..

Me: Its okay Dr...

Him: Dr Cowen..

Me: Dr Cowen..

He chuckled, i also chuckled..

He looked young, and very attractive...

Him: Try to get some rest

Me: Ain't that a classic line that all the doctors tell their patients?

He chuckled again..

Him: Then ask the nurse to take you out for a walk...

Me: Pssshhh I'm sure i look like a monster, i don't wanna scare people..

Him: if monsters do exist, then you a beautiful one..

I giggled...

Me: Don't play with me..

Him: You don't believe that I'm beautiful?

Me: Well not after this..

He looked at me..

Me: What?

Him: I'll take you out on a date tomorrow, nothing much but we'll get something at the canteen..

Me: Ohw

Him: will that make you feel beautiful?

Me: i guess so..

He smiled at Me..

Him: Tomorrow it is then..

I smiled at him too.. Our sweet moment was interrupted by someone clearing their throat.. We concentrated on the door and it was Bonggi, she was with Noluvuyo..

I wonder what she's doing here..

PART 32 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:45] Ron: PART 33 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Dr Cowen walked out as Bonggi and Noluvuyo walked in to sit on that small bench next to my bed. Bonggi looked at me, she didn't believe that a human being can endure such a brutal attack and still live to tell the story....

Bonggi: How are you Funi?

Me: i wish i could say that I'm fine but..

Her: i understand..

I wish they could just say why they here already..

Bonggi: Are they treating you good here? How are the Nurses?

I thought of telling her about the Attack from that Doctor, but then it's none of her business..

Me: Everything is fine..

Her: Are you sure because if everything is not good then we can have you go to another hospital...

Me: I'm fine Bonggi thank you..

She stopped fussing and looked at me..

Her: i am so sorry about what happened, i cannot begin to imagine the pain that you going through..

Me: I'll be okay...

Her: Have you talked to the police?

Me: about?

Her: about the Attack?

Me: Not yet..

Vuyo: Do you remember who attacked you that night?

Are they kidding? Ofcourse i remember who attacked Me...

Me: Unfortunately not..

I saw a sign of relief from her..

Her: Well uhm Zuko has already talked to the police on your behalf. He identified the culprits and they locked up as we speaking..

I faked a smile..

Me: That's good

She smiled too.

Her: That's very good..

Noluvuyo cleared her Throat..

Bongi: Ohw ya uhm.. We have decided that since you going to be our bride soon, we would like to take you to school so you can study Fashion design and we also gonna pay for your Father's treatment until you work and can afford to pay for his treatment..

Wow, so she wanna hide her son's disgrace by using mine to bribe me.. No amount of money can fix what Zuko did to me..

Me: uhm that's big..

Her: it's our Gift to you...

Me: Bongji you don't have too..

Her: i want too.. Funi look we not saying that you are not good enough for my son, but the Mqela family is very educated. Even our relatives hold very high qualifications. Do you know that my sister's son is studying at England?

Me: No i didn't know...

Her: Well he is. Don't take this the wrong way, but we don't want you to be the odd one out..

Me: Ohw

Her: i hope that didn't come across as me despising you...

Me: Not at all..

She smiled..

Her: i guess we can go now Noluvuyo.. Uhm Funi we will see you some other time.

Me: Thank you for coming to visit me...

She stood up and hugged me.

Her: Anytime..

Noluvuyo hugged me too..

Vuyo: get well soon we still have a wedding to plan, and I'm talking about your wedding

Me: I'll try.

Then they left..

The nerve though!.. I really don't want anything to do with the Mqela family at all.....

I was chilled in my ward the whole day just watching TV and lazing around. My father didn't come to see me which was unlike him, unless his sick.....

Jozi came to see me at around 16:00 she was all alone....

Her: Hey cuz

She hugged me...

Me: hi...

Her: ive brought you kfc i hope it's good enough..

She put it on my shelf..

I didn't say anything my mind was far away, very far away....

Jozi: Funi..

I looked at her.

Me: Huh?

Her: Are you alright?

Me: Ya i am..

Her: Don't lie to me.

I let out a sigh..

Me: when was the last time you saw my father?

Her: That time when we were here..

Me: That was the last time you saw him?

Her: Yes bae, what's wrong?

Me: i don't know it's just unusual for him not to come and visit.

Her: Maybe he doesn't have money for a cab.. You know taxi fare is expensive this days....

Me: Ya maybe...

Her: now don't worry loosen up a bit..

Jozi chilled with me until 18:00, we just talked about random things i truly enjoy her presence....

She left as soon as nurse Brown came in for his shift, and promised to come and visit tomorrow.....

Brown: How are you?

He said that while hugging me...

Me: I'm fine thanks and you?

Him: I'm good.. I was worried about you

Me: Nurse Melissa was good to me

Him: i trust her with my life that one..

Me: You should because she's good..

Him: What can i do for you?

Me: Nothing much hey, just sit down and let's talk..

He pulled up the bench and sat down. As we were about to have a nice chat, Zuko walked in..

Brown: press the button help will come very fast..

I reached for the button..

Zuko: i wouldn't do that if i was you...

Me: What do you want?

He was holding a tab.. He came to me and gave me the tab..

Him: i would watch very carefully if i was with you..

He played some video and i couldn't believe what i saw. It made my heart sink, it made my stomach turn in that i dropped the tab.. I looked at him with tears in my eyes..

Him: Maybe we should talk hey..

He sat down.. I looked at him

PART 33 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:46] Ron: PART 34 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I have never come across such an Evil person. The Video showed my father laying on what looked like a hospital bed, but i could clearly tell from his surroundings that he wasn't at a hospital. They performed an open heart surgery on him, and put something in his heart that looked like a small creature which was squeezing his heart every now and then. I looked at Zuko with eyes full of tears..

Me: You sick bastard!

Him: i don't think that's something nice to say..

Me: What did you do to him?

Him: You see, that's a parasite. It's slowly squeezing his heart and if it's not removed soon his heart won't make it..

Me: Why Zuko? What is it that you want from me?

Him: Something that I've always wanted, i want you to marry me..

Brown: You cannot force someone to marry you by putting through something like this..

Zuko looked a me..

Him: Who is this fool?

I looked at Nurse Brown.

Me: Please give us some few minutes

Brown: I'm not going anywhere

Me: Brown please..

He looked at Zuko then looked at me..

Him: Fine.. If something happens don't hesitate to press the buzzer

Me: i won't..

He then walked out.. I looked at Zuko.

Him: i did my little research on you. You don't have a family other than your Father. So if he dies that is going to be the end of you..

I had no strength to argue or fight him..

Him: I'm giving you an opportunity of a lifetime. Marry me and i promise to give you the best life ever, and you are gonna save your Father..

I was just laying on my bed with tears streaming down...

He leaned closer and wiped my tears..

Him: Come on Funi, it's not like I'm asking you to sacrifice your life..

Zuko cannot be a human being, no human being can do this to another human being.. He stood up and kissed me on my forehead.

Him: think about it, and know that you running out of time..

He looked at his tab..

Him: I'm gonna leave it here, I'm sure it will help you to make a good choice....

After saying that he walked out..

I took the tab and threw it on the floor. Why is Zuko Pitton me through so much pain? You cannot say that you love someone but then treat them like this.. He is abusing me mentally, physically, and emotionally. I don't know how much of this i can take...

Brown Came back as i was sitting there crying.

Him: You cannot marry him Funi, we will find a way..

I shook my head.

Me: Zuko is dangerous. The best thing to do is to just give him what he wants...

Brown: We talking about your life here

Me: And we talking about my father's life here.. What would i be without him?

Brown: You forgetting one thing..

I looked at him.

Him: He is not God, he is a human being.. This Zuko of yours has to have a flaw. When we find his flaws then we cannot use them against him...

I understand what Nurse Brown was saying, but that is gonna take long..

3 days passed with me still thinking about what happened. I cannot lose my father, i mean if he dies my Grandma is finally gonna kick me out of that house and where would I go?

I had call Zuko to come today because I wanted to let him in about the decision that i have made.....

It didn't take him long to arrive, which just goes to show how much this is important to him.. He stood at the door all looking at him. I also looked at him and thought to myself what drives such a cute guy to do the things that he does. I wish that his heart was as good as how he looks on the outside..

He slowly made his way to me.

Him: Ey

Me: hi

He grabbed the bench and Sat down..

Me: i thought about what you said

Him: And?

Me: I'll do it.. I'll Marry you..

He smiled at me..

Him: i knew that you smart. That's the best decision you've made..

If only he knew that I'm doing this for my father, as soon as you father is okay i will find a way to get away from Zuko even if it means committing suicide i will..

Him: So when you get discharged you'll come and live with me..

Me: Okay

Him: Funi i know that you have insecurities about me, but i assure you that we gonna have the

best relationship ever..

I'd like to see that..

I just signed my death warranty..

PART 34 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:47] Ron: PART 35 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Sometimes in life we are faced with difficulties that critical decisions have to be made in order to save those that we love. I love my father more than life itself, and i am not going to let him die like this..I had agreed to marry Zuko in exchange for my father's life, agreeing to marry him was like signing my soul to the devil but what can i say? I really need to see my father alive. Seeing him in that video vulnerable like that truly killed me deep inside...

Today I was getting discharged, Zuko will come and fetch me because he wants me to move in with him permanently....

I was standing there in my ward with Nurse Brown fixing my hat.

Him: This hat suits you very well...

I couldn't go out in public with all those stitches and scars..

Me: Thank you

He put his hands on my shoulders..

Him: Be strong, we are gonna get him remember he is not God..

I sat down on the bed.

Him: You have my number stored if anything happens call me..

Nurse Brown has this idea that we must get something on Zuko, something to break him with....

Me: i just want to break him, i want you crush his soul the same way that he did to mine...

He sat next to me..

Him: You are strong Funi, and we gonna get through this..

Me: i hope so..

Zuko walked in on us still talking like that..

Zuko: Good morning

We greeted back...

Brown: I'll go get your meds at the dispensary...

Me: Thank you

He stood up and went.. Zuko came closer and kissed me.

Him: I'm so happy that today I'm Bringing you home...

I faked a smile..

Him: We can do this Funi, we have our whole lives ahead of us..

I seriously wonder why Zuko wants me to marry him soo bad..

Me: i have one request

Him: What?

Me: i would like to see my father

Him: No..

Me: Please, i just wanna see him..

He sighed..

Him: Okay we'll go and you can see him...

Me: Thank you..

Nurse Brown came back with my meds and gave me a hug,while Whispering in my ear..

Him: Be strong..

I wish i could be strong.. After a few seconds we broke the hug and i bid him farewell then we left....

Zuko didn't wanna take any chances, so he blind folded me all the way to where i was gonna see my father. He made it clear that i shouldn't know the route incase i try to contact the police.....

We got there, and he took the blind fold off. It looked like an abandoned warehouse in the middle of nowhere, we started walking to the entrance.. I was nervous, i wanted to die i mean seeing my father in that condition is going to kill me.. The inside of that place was pure white, i saw alot of chemicals and what looked like scientists busy mixing chemicals.. So all this people work for Zuko...

We were made to wear those white suits because apparently my father was "highly contagious" and then we were taken to him..

Seeing him laying there just did things to me. He looked very vulnerable with that parasite slowly

squeezing his heart...

Although he was unconscious, i could see that he was fighting to stay alive..

I don't know what to name Zuko, there is no human being who can do such to another human being..

I couldn't take it anymore, i Walked out of that room in tears.. I then took off the suit and Walked out with Zuko following me..

Him: Funi!..

I turned around..

Me: Leave me alone Zuko!!!

He ran after me until he caught up with him,he then grabbed me by my arm...

Him: See this is why i didn't want you to see him..

I slapped him across the face...

Me: i want nothing to do with you anymore you hear me?

I then started walking, i didn't know where i was walking too but i kept on walking...

I then realised that even if i walk away but his holding my father's heart captive.. I stopped and turned around, he was standing by his car and i made my way to him..

What was running in my mind was that i wanted to kill him...

Him: Are you done with throwing your silly temper tantrum?

I didn't say anything, i opened the car door and went in... He got In on his side and started driving...

Him: Your Father is going to be just fine...

I didn't say nothing..

Him: after we get married i will release him from this sorrow....

We got to his house, and fiks was at the kitchen feeding Aphiwe his purity..

Zuko: molweni (greetings)

Fiks turned and looked at us..

Fiks: and they are home.

Zuko: Sorry we a bit late, we stopped somewhere first..

She looked at me..

Fiks: Hi Funi..

Me: hi fiks..

Zuko: i think Funi needs to rest a little so I'll walk her upstairs.

He looked at me..

Him: Let's go..

We left them there and then we walked upstairs to his bedroom... Him: This is gonna be your home from now on..

Me: I'm ecstatic..

Him: You know Funi i don't understand why you have to be negative about this..

I noticed drugs on the dressing table, looked like cocaine...

Me: didn't your mother teach you that you can't mix drugs with meds, especially someone in your condition you cannot be doing drugs..

Him: Don't worry about me and my condition..

I looked at those drugs and i immediately had an idea, what if i poison him? Substitute that cocaine powder with a deadly substance..

PART 35 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:48] Ron: PART 36 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I am not gonna be one those women who become a statistic of domestic violence, or the kind of woman who gets killed by their partner through domestic violence. I am 22 and i have my whole life ahead of me, if Zuko thinks that he has me wrapped around his middle finger then he should think again.....

I went back to the bedroom after drinking my pain killers and he was standing there in front of the mirror fixing himself. He was all dressed up in a black suit as if like he was going to an important classy meeting, or as if like he was meeting up with Obama....

His cologne filled the room intoxicating me as i Walked In..

He looked at me through the mirror.

Him: i am going out for a while..

I looked at the time, it was now 16:00 on the dot...

If it wasn't a public holiday i would actually believe that he was meeting with a business associate, but then again with how good he looked another part of me told me that he is meeting up with a woman. It has to be a woman, there is no other logical explanation to how good he looked, to why he would take so much time into preparing himself..

He came up to me and pecked me on my lips..

Him: If you get bored, Fiks and Aphiwe will keep you company...

Me: Fiks doesn't like me..

Him: I've spoken to her.

Me: Its fine

Him: Don't wait up for me..

I wasn't planning on waiting up for him vele..

He kissed me again and then walked out..

I wish i could find out what made Zuko to be like this. No one can wake up one day and decide to be this heartless, there has to be a root for all his pain and mental illness..

I walked over to the dressing table and looked at the picture of him and his wife, they looked so happy Shame. Was a pic of their wedding day, she was in a white dress and he was in a suit. They were smiling at each other as he arched her back, as if like he was going to kiss her...

I put the picture back in its place, and then stared at that small plastic that contained cocaine. I didn't waste any time i went and flushed it down the toilet.....

I didn't do much for the rest of that day, I was very bored of sitting in that bedroom all on my own while Zuko went to fuck another bitch. I wish i could say that i didn't care about that, I wish i could say that it didn't hurt me but unfortunately it did hurt a little. I mean a part of me loved Zuko, and that part of me will always be hurt if his actions are to hurt me.....

It was now around 18:00, i had just bathe and wore my pjs. Zuko had went to great lengths in buying me clothes off which i didn't know how he knew my size....

I made my way downstairs and Fiks was sitting on the floor at the TV room playing with Aphiwe, i stood there looking at them until she noticed me..

Me: Sorry i didn't mean to interrupt..

Her: Its fine, you didn't interrupt.. You can join us...

Me: Okay

I went to sit down. Fiks would steal looks at me, when i notice that she was looking at me, she

would quickly concentrate on something else..

Me: Its okay, i know how horrible i look..

One thing i hate is people pitying me, and fiks looked at me as if like she was pitying me..

Her: It's not like that, just that..

I looked at her, she didn't have any right words to say..

Her: i.. Those stitches look painful..

Me: Well i was out when Doctors stitched me..

Her: Funi look i am truly sorry..

Me: No, please don't do that.. Don't pity me..

She kept quiet, she didn't have anything to say..

Me: Why does he act like that though Fiks? Has anything ever happened that hurt him soo bad and now he wanna inflict the same pain to other people?

She looked down still..

Me: Fiks if you know something please tell me, i cannot help him if i don't know the truth..

She looked down again clearly indicating that she's hiding something, then looked at me after a few minutes...

Her: i made Mac&Cheese want some?

Me: Fiks

Her: Yiyeye Funi! (leave it)

I didn't really expect such a response from her..

Her: if he hasn't told you then it means he doesn't want you knowing!!

She stood up..

Her: Do you want the Mac&Cheese or what?

Me: Yea sure.

She quickly walked out of the room. From how fiks was acting, i could clearly see that she was hiding something.....

It was useless pushing it because she wasn't telling, so i just let it go..

We had the Mac&Cheese she had prepared and it didn't taste that bad.

Me: So you telling me that you prepared that on your own?

She laughed..

Her: Well not really, i just bought Mac&Cheese mate then added milk and magarine and put it in the oven..

Me: Well it tasted good though

Her: Thank you..

My phone rang at that instant, and it was brown..

Me: Sorry i have to take this..

Her: No problem...

I stood up and went to answer the phone at the kitchen..

Me: Brown

Him: Did i catch you at the wrong time? Is he there?

Me: No he went out Wad up?

Him: i have found something interesting on our Main man.

Me: What is it?

Him: i have his old medical records..

Me: I'm not following..

Him: i was at the file room and funny enough i came across Zuko Mqela's old medical records..

Me: And?

Him: Well according to what I'm seeing, he was brought in at this hospital alot when he was young..

Me: What was the problem?

Him: minor injuries, minor burns, shallow breathing, and the list goes on..

Me: Wow..

Brown: it seems like Zuko was always sick as a child, because on several occasions he was brought in at least once a month..

Me: Looks that way...

Him: Well that's all i got for now.

Me: Thank you even Though i don't know how that information will help us, but thank you

Him: Same here, but i thought i should let you know because the hospital is going to destroy the Files they very old and they attracting mice in the storeroom..

Me: Well then thank you, for letting me know..

He was quiet for a while..

Me: Brown?

I could hear that he was paging thorough something..

Him: You not gonna believe this..

Me: What?..

Him: You really not gonna believe this..

Me: What is it brown?

Him: There's a medical report here stating that Zuko's mother was arrested after investigations proved that she was the one making him sick. In one Occasion she poisoned him, Doctors found high amounts of sodium in his body..

Me: Brown what are you telling me?

Him: it looks like his mother tried to kill him alot of times,ever since he was a baby..

My jaw literally dropped..

PART 36 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:49] Ron: PART 37 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We always quick to judge someone based on their actions before we actually date deeper into finding out what made this person to be the way that they are. I do not believe that there's someone who was born an abuser, a rapist, or even a serial killer. There is something that led them to do what they doing, for every pain that another Person inflicts on another person that is mainly because they also been hurt alot of times.. I do not make excuses for an abusive behaviour, or a bad behaviour because quite frankly no bad act should be an excuse for another person to hurt someone else. But can we for just one second put ourselves in that person's shoes? Never in your life judge someone because of their acts until you know what made them to be like that. My mother would say rather Pray for that person than to judge.....

It was after that phone call, where i found myself sitting on the bed thinking about Zuko, thinking

about the pain his been put through by his own mother..believe it or not there are mothers out there who are are capable of hating their own children...

I looked at the time and it was exactly 23:30. I was sitting on the bed waiting for Zuko, i wasn't even laying on the bed i was sitting there with my phone in my my hands thinking about what Brown told me..

The bedroom door opened after a few minutes,and he walked in.. He wasn't drunk, he didn't even look high he just looked a bit tired. I couldn't even find traces that he was with another woman, he was just his ordinary self which made me realise that i might have misjudged him on my statement earlier that he was meeting up with another woman...

He put his phone and car keys ontop of that small dressing table Chair..

Him: I thought you'd be sleeping, i told you not to wait up for me..

I looked at him and my heart just broke into pieces immediately. He grew up to be this man that he is Today knowing that his mother had tried to kill him not once, not twice, but several times.. I mean from how their relationship is, he must know that his mom doesn't love him..i can just imagine him witnessing the love his friends and their mothers shared while he was young, and knowing that he doesn't have that. Worse his father was never in the picture, his childhood must've been painful..

I looked at his lips moving, he was talking about something but it fell on deaf ears, he was busy doing his cufflinks too as he was talking..

Zuko is a very strong person, he has a heart of a lion to would've survived all of that. knowing myself i would've committed suicide after finding out that my mother doesn't love Me... I looked at him, as he was talking busy showing that sexy charming side smile of his..

Me: Zuko i love you..

He stopped what he was doing and looked at me...

Him: What?

I seriously don't know where that came From, but all i know is that a part of me loves him, Because here i am being shuttered by his pain i mean if i didn't love him then i wouldn't be feeling his pain..

I didn't even realise that i was now crying, until i felt tears burning my cheeks and eyes. He was standing there looking at me, was that premature for me to say? Especially because here he is trying to kill my father and here i am proclaiming my love for him, am i being selfish?..

I really didn't know what to say at that instant so i stood up and wiped my tears..

Me: i am so sorry.. I don't know what got to me..

I started walking to the door and before i could even touch the door handle, he grabbed me by my hand and pulled me closer to his shirtless body. Although he was shirtless, but i could still smell his cologne, my tears falling on that smooth skin...

Him: I'm sorry...

I was sobbing Bitterly, i don't know why this was hurting me soo bad..

Him: Is this about your Father?

I wanted to say something but words failed me, but whenever words fail me tears always find me....

I don't know how or when i fell asleep. All i remember was me crying and him holding me, and us moving to the bed then i must've cried until i fell asleep.. I got out of bed, i had an excruciating headache.. I wish this headaches could go already..

I made my way to the bathroom to brush my teeth and wash my face. My eyes were swollen and a bit red clearly indicating that i had been crying the night before..

When i was done freshening up, i made my way downstairs.....

..

While i was going down the stairs i saw him playing with Aphiwe at the kitchen and fiks looked like she was preparing breakfast.. Although Zuko is how ever you want to paint him, kodwa he is a damn good Father....

I made my way to them.

Me: Morning..

He turned around and looked at me.

Him: Morning

He looked ready for work..

Fiks: Hi Funi sit down i made breakfast..

Me: Let me just drink pain killers first..

Zuko: What's wrong?

He was holding Aphiwe now in his arms.

Me: Just a headache.

I got to the pantry and got some panado then drank..

Zuko: Want me to take you to the Doctor?

I turned around and looked at them..

Me: I'm sure that i will be okay.

He put Aphiwe on the floor who crawled all the Way to the lounge..

Zuko: Better go and check him..

Fiks: When are you exactly paying me because it seems like I'm your babysitter now?

Zuko: You live in my house and you not paying rent..

Fiks: That's not fair

She said that while making her way to the lounge.. Zuko went and removed the pan from the stove, then after he came and stood next to me..

Him: How are you today?

Me: I'm fine..

Him: i didn't like seeing you crying like that last night

I didn't wanna talk about last night because i was gonna cry again..

Me: i don't wanna talk about Last night..

Him: F..

Me: Zuko please.. Not today.

He kept quiet for a while..

Him: Fine, let me get to work.. I'll see you later.

He kissed me on my forehead and Walked upstairs..

After eating and bathing, i decided that maybe i should meet up with brown so we can talk about this whole Zuko mess..

I had gotten some cash from fiks and i went straight to the hospital to talk to brown...

.

Unfortunately brown was a bit busy when i got there, so i went and waited for him at the Canteen i was with Dr Cowen..

Him: I hope this will be "our date"

I chuckled..

Me: You never forget do you?

Him: Unfortunately for you, i do not forget..

We got coffee and muffins then went to sit down...

Him: Its good to see you

Me: Good to see you too

Him: You look good

I smiled..

Me: Don't i?

Him: Yeap you do..

Me: Can i ask you something?

He looked at me..

Me: Off the record?

Him: Off the record..

Me: How dangerous is Bipolar if it's not controlled?

Him: Could be pretty dangerous

Me: Death dangerous?

Him: You could say that..

Me: Ohw..

Him: Why ask?

Me: Just a study that I'm doing

Him: Well i can borrow you my notes on mental disorders

Me: That would be great..

We continued having our coffee in peace..

PART 37 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:49] Ron: PART 38 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Brown met up with me as soon as he was done with his patient. We went to some restaurant next door and got some drinks....only i got a chef salad, and ice tea while he got an Apple juice..

Me: Not hungry?

Him: i wouldn't say that I'm not hungry..

Me: What's wrong?

Him: When you are a nurse, you come across certain things that can make it difficult for you to even process food..

Me: I'm sorry..

Him: I've been a Nurse for quite a while now, but i still can't get used to other things..

Me: i for one admire Nurses. If it wasn't for you guys many people would suffer..

He was busy starring at his glass..

Him: Yea..

He then looked at me.

Him: Are we here to talk about my job?

Me: Not really i..

His phone rang.. He looked at it.

Him: i Have to take this, it's my fiance..

He answered and put it on loud speaker..

Him: Hi babe

Voice: Hello honey...

It was a male voice, so my suspicions about Brown being gay were True..

Brown: What do you have for me?

Him: i have found alot of interesting things..

Brown: i am actually with Funi, so you can talk and you on loud speaker.

Him: i don't know if it's something i should be telling you guys over the phone...

Brown: Talk love..

Him: Okay. It turns out that the reason why Zuko and his father are not communicating Is that,

His mother has been brainwashing Zuko ever since when he was young. That his father is evil, his father tried to kill them by burning their house down.. She told him quite alot of things that made Zuko hate his father when he was growing up..

Brown: Where those accusations true?

Him: No.

I was lost, how does Brown's fiance know about Zuko and his family..

Me: Brown I'm lost..

Brown: I'll find you later, for now listen..

Fiance: Zuko and his siblings they all have different fathers, and she has kept all of them from having communication with their father's except for Fikile..

Me: Fikile still has communication with Her father?

Fiance: Sort off. You see, Bongi is still legally Married to Fikile's Father. The reason why they not living together is the fact that he used to abuse Zuko, and Bongi would turn a blind eye until a social worker intervned and that's when Bongi said it was better if he moved out than her losing her child..

Me: Why would Bongi not wanna lose Zuko if she never loved him?

Fiance: bits me too..

I laid back on my chair while exhaling loudly..

Bongi was making me angry, she was making me very very very angry.....

Fiance: Look guys i have to go..

He hunged up, there was silence between me and Brown for a while..

Brown: That was quite some information

Me: What is it that your finance does again?

Brown: His a Pl.

Me: That explains it..

Him: i need to get back to work, i will keep in contact with you..

Me: Okay..

We stood up and hugged each other..

Him: We getting there into finding something that we can use against him..

I flashed a fake smile. If only Brown knew that i didn't wanna get back at Zuko anymore, all of this was just crushing me....

When Brown went back to work, i decided to go to Zuko just surprise him with some lunch.....

I got to the office and everything was haywire, everyone was going up and down like headless chickens it was crazy.. I went to the receptionist.

Me: Can i go up?

I have long passed the stage of "Make an appointment"

She looked at me..

Her: i don't know if you should go up..

I put the food on top of the counter, she leaned closer..

Her: Zuko is in the boardroom and he is having a fit! He is yelling at everyone, he is firing everyone, his just gone crazy!

Me: Why? What ticked him off?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: What i heard w..

I heard a voice behind us..

Voice: Lungi stop with the gossip already!!

I turned around was this beautiful blonde..

Her: You saw how angry the boss is and you wanna get us more into trouble?

She looked at me, then looked at Lungi..

Her: You couldn't gossip over the phone anymore, so now you bringing your ghetto friends here?

I looked at her not believing what she just said..

Me: Ghetto?

Lungi: Actually she's..

Her: i don't care, just get here out of here!!

She then walked her skinny to the elevator..

I looked at Lungi..

Me: What's her story?

Lungi: She got hired last week and always wanna be in Zuko's good books...she's more like the teacher's puppet.

She leaned over again and Whispered..

Her: i think she crushes on him

Me: Is it?

She nodded..

Her: But you didn't hear it from me

I took the food..

Me: My lips are sealed..

I walked up to the elevator, to go to Zuko's office...

I got to the boardroom and Lungi wasn't lying Zuko was losing it...I stood at the door and watched everything..

Zuko: i might as well just work alone at MQ, because obviously i have hired a bunch of amateurs!!

The blondie was there taking down notes..

Her: Mr Mqela i think i speak for all of us when i say, can you please give us a last chance....

The other employees were nodding their heads..

Zuko: Kate what are you in this company?

Her: Your Personal assistant Sir..

Zuko: Keep it at being my assistant!

I couldn't contain myself i giggled. I didn't realise my giggle was loud, now everyone was looking at me and i didn't know what to say..

Zuko: See even my Girlfriend is laughing at you..

He then stood up, and looked at them..

Him: You are all fired, i will run this company alone!!

He then walked up to me and we went to his office..

Me: They are fired?

Him: # Bonke

I put the food on the table..

Me: What's wrong?

He sat down on his chair..

Him: Nothing.

I looked at him.

Him: Someone has been digging information about me..

Me: Whose that?

Him: That's what i need to find out! They've been digging about my father my mother..

He hit the table..

Him: Clearly that person doesn't know me!!!

I stood there with my heart beating fast, i hope Brown's fiance doesn't get busted..

PART 38 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:51] Ron: PART 39 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We were now back at the house, was just after 17:00. Seeing the mood that Zuko was in, i quickly crushed a few panado tablets, put the powder in that small plastic and then put it where his cocaine was..

All i was praying for, was that he doesn't notice that I had replaced his cocaine with Panado..

We were in the bedroom, he was changing his suit to a more home relaxing outfit, and i was sitting on the bed..

Him: Feel like takeaways tonight?

Me: Ya we can do takeaways.

Him: What did you have in mind?

Me: Not really sure, maybe we can go out..

Him: That's a plan..

He moved closer to the dressing table where his cocaine was...

Me: I'll let fiks know then..

He touched his cocaine and i stood up. The walk to the door was the longest walk of my life.. I was thankful when i touched the door handle.

Him: Funi..

I stood there frozen, i closed my eyes was praying that he didn't call out my name but unfortunately he did.. I slowly turned around and looked at him.. He opened that small plastic, dipped his finger in it then tasted what was inside...

Him: Care to explain?

I shook my head no.. I didn't know what to say, but mostly i didn't wanna piss him more off..

Him: Eyy Sundiqhela Funi!

I was scared i won't lie, i was very scared... I opened the door and tried running away, but unfortunately my legs and feet failed me. Zuko got a hold of me before i could put my foot even on one stair, and he dragged me back to the bedroom where He beat me senseless. I cried, i screamed, i apologised but everything fell on deaf ears...

For that 3minutes of him kicking Me repeatedly all over my body while I was on the floor, was the worst part of my life.....

When he was done with me, he took his car keys and left...

I had dragged my painful body to sit on the bed. My whole body was painful, Zuko almost killed me..

As i was sitting there, i told myself that i am done with Zuko. I am only 22 years old and I'm not gonna be one of those girls who gets abused then uses "but i love him" cliché, no i am going to leave him for good this time...

I took my phone and called Brown to fetch me, because i know that Brown's place is the only place where Zuko will never find me..

After learning about what happened, Brown wasted no time he promised to be here in less than an hour.....

Brown Kept his promise, he came with his fiance and they took me to their place. They live in a small beautiful 2 room flat. His flat was very clean and neat. Everything was perfectly placed where it was supposed to be..

I was sitting on top of the kitchen counter next to the sink, with Brown examining my bruised body..

Brown: Well i don't think that you have internal bleeding..

Me: it's very painful though

He lowered my tshirt again, and his fiancé came with a glass of wine..

Him: Wine just like you wanted

Me: Thank you...

Him: Calvin, my name is Calvin

Me: Thank you Calvin..

I took that glass of wine from him and just gulped it down with them looking at me...

Calvin: Uhm i have to go and carry out an assignment.. I will see you guys later..

He kissed Brown and left..

Brown: Want something to eat?

I shook my head no..

Him: Something to drink, except for alcohol Ofcause

I nodded my head no...

Me: He knows that we on him..

He looked at me..

Him: I'm not following..

Me: Zuko knows that we digging up information about him and his family..

Brown's eyes popped out..

Brown: How? Because we have taken precautions..

Me: Because he is that good!

Brown: Calvin has been a PI for 3 years now and he has never been caught..

Me: Well he doesn't know that it's us but he knows that someone is digging something on him..

Brown: This man sounds dangerous Funi..

Me: He is..

We went to bed that night Brown made sure that i was warm and all that. Only that i couldn't

sleep because of my terrible headaches. I found myself quickly jumping out of bed and going to vomit at the toilet.. I sank down on the floor, i was dizzy, i was nauseated, and i had a terrible headache. The headaches started right after when Zuko attacked Me for the first time by hitting me repeatedly with his gun in my head.....

When i was done vomiting, i went back to bed but i didn't sleep i was busy tossing and turning...

...

I don't know when i fell asleep, but i opened my eyes and realised that it was a new day. The sun was shining bright through the blinds.

I got up, and sat up straight. My body was more painful today than it was yesterday.. I took my phone from under the pillow and i had 30 missed calls from Zuko and round about 20 messages..

My phone rang as i was about to read his messages..

Me: Zuko

Although we were miles away from each other, but i still get that fear when i talk to him..

Him: Bunju

Me: What do you want?

Him: Where are you?

Me: Zuko what do you want?

Him: Come home please..

Me: What home?

Him: Bunju don't be like that..

Me: You almost killed me Zuko

Him: I know, I know.. But come home so we can talk about this.

Me: forget it i am never ever coming back, i don't want nothing to do with you anymore!!

Him: Stop with all this nonsense and come home!!

His voice wasn't pleading anymore, it was firm and carried to much authority in it..

Me: Bye Zuko

Him: Do you know what's gonna happen to your Father?

Yes i was worried about my father, yes i think of him and his state everyday but I'm tired of Zuko blackmailing me with that..

Me: kill him Zuko..

I know he wasn't gonna kill him, because if he does then he won't have anything to blackmail me with..

Him: i give you 24 hours to come home or else your Father is dead!

He then hunged up...

The day that this guy dies, it will be the day that I'm gonna celebrate..

PART 39 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 10:51] Ron: PART 40 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I was at Dr Cowen's surgery, i had consulted because of my never ending headaches..his surgery was just beautiful and a bit busy. You can just tell that not everyone can afford to come here..

Me: i didn't know that you own a surgery

Him: There's alot that you don't know about me..

Me: How do you manage working at the hospital, and having to be here too?

Him: i prioritise.. I am part time at the hospital, i mostly help with surgeries especially heart transplant surgeries because i am thinking of being a heart surgeon so that's good exposure for me..

Me: Yooh you have big dreams..

Him: Medicine has always been a field that i wanted to specialise in..

He flipped through my file..

Him: The pregnancy test came back negative.. At least we know that you not pregnant.

Me: Thank God that is a relief.

Him: You don't wanna be a mom?

Me: Its not that..

He looked at me waiting for an explanation.

Me: Its a long story.

Him: You have migraines..

Me: Is that dangerous?

Him: Not exactly...you said Paracetamol doesn't work?

Me: Paracetamol?

Him: Sorry Panado.

Me: Nope it doesn't work.

Him: i think that Ibuprofen will work better, it's a good analgesic especially when it comes to Tension headaches, Migranes, and Inflammation..

Me: You the Doctor hey..

Him: I'll give you that.

He went to his Shelf...

Me: Thank again Dr Cowen for letting me consult without paying.

Him: Its alright..

Me: Really i wish i could repay you..

He took the pills and looked at me.

Him: actually you can.

Me: How?

Him: an official date tonight?

Me: You don't give up do you?

Him: never..

He got me water and i drank the pills..

Me: i have to go, Brown is waiting for me..

Him: I'll see you tonight

He gave me a pad and pen..

Him: Address where i can pick you up

Me: i am currently living with Brown.

Him: Perfect then i know Brown's place.. I'll pick you up at 19:00

Me: Its a deal.

There was an awkward moment were we just gazed into each other's eyes.. I broke the eye contact because it was getting very awkward...

Me: uhm i have to go..

Him: Yes Ofcause

Me: Thank you again.

Him: I'll see you tonight

I smiled at him and took the pills then walked out to meet Brown at the reception... Brown is a very free soul, i found him talking with the receptionist and i went up to them..

Me: i think we can go now..

Him: Thank you, for a moment i thought that you were never gonna come out of there..

Me: Don't be silly

He said his goodbyes to the receptionist and then we went to his car..

Him: So what did he say?

Me: Nothing much just Migranes

Him: interesting..

He started driving..

Me: although i agreed to go out on a date with him tonight...

Brown: You slut!!

I chuckled..

Brown: So do you like him?

Me: Well i don't know..

Brown: Well i have worked with him for a while now, and hear it from me he is a nice person..

Me: i think he is too..

There wasn't much to do at that the flat other than just lazing around.. Brown prepared for his nightshift, Calvin went about his own business..

I was sitting at the lounge when i got a phone call from My cousin Jozi..

Me: Hey long time..

Her: Hey Funi

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm good.. This is not a social call

Me: Okay..

Him: Its about your Father..

I sat up straight, my throat was dry..

Me: What about him?

Her: His in hospital, and he is in a very critical condition..

Me: Hospital?

Her: Apparently he was dropped at the hospital entrance last night by two unidentified men..

So Zuko has finally let my father go..

Me: Which hospital?

Her: i will Sms you. I don't have much details but that's all i know..

Me: Thank you for informing me..

Her: Sharp

She hunged up. I felt a sense of relief, yes his in a critical condition but Zuko has finally let him go..

PART 40 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:05] Ron: PART 41 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Cowen and i did go out. We went to this beautiful Italian restaurant. He really went all out to impress me...

We were sitting there, opposite each other he was a bit nervous and so was i but I guess all first dates are like that..

Him: i hope you like it.

Me: doesn't look like a bad restaurant.

The waitress came to give us menus..

Him: You look beautiful by the way

Me: Thank you, and you don't look bad either..

He smiled.

I went to order a dish that had chicken in it. Chicken was the only thing i recognised..

Him: How are the Headaches?

Me: Not bad anymore, thanks to the pills that you have given me.

Him: I'm glad..

Me: i don't mean to be forward but..

He looked at me.

Him: But?

Me: You are way to perfect to be single..

He chuckled.

Me: Are you gay?

Him: No I'm not.. It's hard to keep a woman with my line of work. I am always busy, i am hardly at home so that's the main reason why woman Cannot stay with Me...

Me: Well that's no reason to leave, I mean you not a total psycho..

He looked at me.

Him: Total psycho?

I looked at him too not realising of what i said..

Me: uhm just a lousy comment.. We went on to eat.

Cowen and i had a nice dinner at the restaurant, we also had a nice talk. I really like the person that he is. He is sweet, he is kind, he has a warm heart and all that but then Zuko came like this too and later i found out that he was crazy.....

He drove me straight home after our cosy date that was a bit awkward too....

Me: Thank you i really had a great time

Him: Thank you for agreeing to go out with me.. Hoping we can do this again.

Me: i hope so too.

Him: if you give me your number i will call you..

I wrote my number down for him.

Him: Thank you

Me: Bye

Him: Bye

I got out of his car, and Walked to the flat..

The flat was empty when i got inside Brown was at work, and Calvin was doing his PI work..

I didn't do much, i just had myself coffee, took a warm bath too and then went to bed.....

..

I woke up the following day, Brown was preparing a scrumptious breakfast and Calvin was sitting at the table with his laptop..

Me: Good morning

They greeted back..

Brown: Sit down, I'll dish up for you...

Me: Thank you. I thought you'd be sleeping though, night shift is no joke..

Brown: I'm used to it..

As i was sitting there my phone rang across the table , and i went to answer it..

Me: Hello

Voice: Hey Funi

Me: uhm who is this?

Voice: It's me Zelda

Me: Ohw hey

Her: i am just informing you that i have replaced you so don't bother coming to work.

Well i figured that out..

Me: i wasn't expecting you to give me another chance.

Her: Then good..

She didn't Say much she hunged up... Brown came to me with a plate of food.

Me: Thank you

Him: Enjoy

I exhaled..

Brown: What's wrong?

Me: i need a job, I cannot keep on living off you guys..

Brown: Really we don't mind having you around...

Me: i know but i need to stand on my own hey.

Calvin: i get what you saying, but won't your ex pursue you?

Me: Well he hasn't contacted me or anything

Brown: You thinking that he has let you go?

Me: I'm thinking so..

The fact that Zuko hasn't contacted Me really is odd...

I really didn't do much for the rest of that day....

Later on i had Jozi come and fetch me so we could go and visit my father..

I really couldn't wait to see him, i missed him and i am very grateful that he is still alive.....

We got to the hospital, and his state was not impressive at all he had pipes helping him to breath and all that. It hurt seeing him in that state, he has been through alot and now he is fighting for his dear life.. I looked at Jozi

Me: Do you think he is going to make it?

Jozi: Well he is very strong that's one thing i know..

Someone cleared their throat and we looked at the door. It was Bongji, i didn't expect her to come here.. She was holding flowers.

Bongji: Molweni

We greeted her back, and she walked in..

Her: ive heard about your Father and i want you to know that you have our full support..

Me: Your full support?

Her: Yes, us the Mqela family your in laws..

Wooooow!!

PART 41 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:06] Ron: PART 42 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I was sitting at the reception trying to calm myself down from Bongji's unexpected visit. We didn't exchange alot of words, she said whatever she wanted to say then left..

I was waiting for Jozi, who went to consult for something..

As i was sitting there, minding my own business, this beautiful lady came to sit next to me..

Her: i hope this chair is not taken..

Me: No it's not

She chuckled.

Her: Then that's good. Imagine sengihleli so then someone shows up and says that's my seat..

I laughed.

Me: if there was someone sitting here then they didn't leave a name or number..

She laughed..

Her: i am Olona by the way

Me: Funi..

Her: Came here to visit someone?

Me: Yes, my father..

Her: Okay

Mr: and you?

Her: i came to check up on my little girl..

Me: I'm sorry.. What's wrong with her?

Her: Agh don't feel bad that one is naughty. She broke her arm on the slide at the park yesterday..

Me: ouch that's painful!

Her: That will teach her..

Me: i don't mean to be forward but, i can tell that you into fashion judging by how you take pride in how you dress..

I like her style. She was wearing a white jumpsuit, a long Brown leather coat, had a brown belt around and brown heels...

Her: Well i am a fashion designer i have my own small boutique

Me: That's great, i have always wanted to be a fashion designer myself..

Her: What happened?

Me: Life happened, but if i could be afforded a chance to go study Fashion design i will..

Her: You know what, my assistant quit and i am looking for an assistant.. Interested?

Me: Are you for real?

Her: i like you, and i think this will be good exposure for you since you wanna study Fashion design some day..

Me: i don't know what to say

She opened her bag, and handed me a pamphlet..

Her: The address is there, you can come tomorrow morning 7am sharp..

I seriously couldn't believe this..

Me: i really don't know what to say...

Her: Just say thank you

Me: Thank you, and i won't disappoint.

Her: I'll see you tomorrow but now i have to go...

Me: I'll be there

She stood up and left. I looked at that pamphlet, and thought to myself that Angels come in different forms...

Jozi came back after a few minutes, and we went out to eat before going back to the flat..

We were at KFC having burgers and Soda. I am obsessed with their burgers..

Me: So what did the Doctor say?

Her: Just gave me meds..

Me: Still can't believe that you consulted for a heartburn.. People with money neh..

Her: i vomit everytime that i eat, so it's serious..

Me: Do you feel like vomiting now?

Her: After drinking the pills he gave me no i am fine..

Me: Then that's good.. So you won't believe what happened?

Her: Yes?

Me: when i was sitting there at the reception waiting for you, this other chick comes and sits next to me. She's a fashion designer by profession, she has a boutique and offered me a job...

Jozi: Wow that's nice...

Me: Have to be there at 7am

Jozi: Go with someone though, to avoid the job scam thing..

Me: Ya i will...tell me when last did you see Zuko?

Her: been a while. He doesn't come to the house anymore.. They meet in clubs with Zakes because i don't want him in my house..

Me: Its strange that his quiet..

Her: You should be happy that he has laid off on you..

Me: Ya i should

After our meal, Jozi drove me straight home or should i say to Brown's Flat. I promised to call her and check up on her since she was sick.. We Hugged each other and then she left and i went to the flat.....

Brown was watching TV when i got in.

Me: Hey

Him: Hey babe

I threw myself on the couch..

Him: How is your Father?

Me: His not soo good, but his still hanging in there...

Him: That's still positive...

Me: Ya there's hope.

We didn't do much, later that day i helped him cooked. We cooked a nice meal, and then i also talked to Cowen on the phone before i went to bed..

Cowen and i we were becoming pretty close now, he even agreed to drive me to the boutique in the morning because i had no one to drive me there... All though my life is peaceful, but i couldn't stop being curious about Zuko being this silent....

The following day i woke up and bathe. I wore my skinny jean with a pink shirt and pink heels. My hair was growing back but it was still a bit short.. I put on make up, bit of jewellery i really wanted to make a good impression....

Cowen came to pick me up at 6:30am and the drive to the boutique wasn't that long...

Me: Thank you for driving me

Him: Thank you for asking me to drive you.. Wasn't safe for you to come alone..

Me: Thank you again..

We got to the boutique, Cowen insisted to walk in there with me he didn't want any mistakes....

The boutique was small but very classy, very elegant, and it was in a porch neighbourhood...

We got in, and Olona was putting clothes in hangers and she looked good, she was well dressed up too..

One thing i noticed was that she has an Ass for years, she was wearing black leggings so they really took it out..

She looked at me and smiled.

Her: Hey you came

Me: Told you i won't disappoint

She came to us..

Me: Thank you again for giving me this job, i swear i won't disappoint you..

Her: i know you won't

She looked at Cowen..

Me: This is my friend Cowen, and Cowen this is Olona..

They greeted each other with a handshake and Cowen kissed me on my my cheek then he left..

Olona: Girl he is fine..

Me: He is ain't he?

Her: Are you guys dating?

Me: No we friends.

Him: Hmmmm if i wasn't engaged i was gonna go for him..

I noticed the ring on her finger with a big stone..

Me: Beautiful ring, when did you get hitched?

Her: 3 days ago

Me: So sweet

She looked at her ring..

Her: He is perfect, and i love him.. He is sweet he loves me and my daughter

Me: i should meet this Mr perfect

Her: Actually you will, he is coming by now later

Me: Can't wait..

She went to show me what i was supposed to do. She showed me how to steam clothes of which was very easy,she told me to that for now and she will teach me other things as we go along...

I was at the back steaming clothes, when i heard the door open. Since Olona was at the front i didn't check who it was, then i heard her yelling in excitement...

Olona: Baby!!!

Voice: Bunju lam.

I swear at that instant i dropped the steaming iron, somebody tell me that my mind is playing games on me! Tell me that it's not who i think it is..

PART 42 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:07] Ron: PART 43 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

My mind wasn't deceiving me it was Zuko, i know that voice too well.

They were still having their sweet moment and my moment wasn't as sweet. All those flashbacks of how he used to beat me came back crowding my mind that I felt like i was about to have a heart attack right there. My heart was beating way too fast, my hands were sweating. I felt some tingling sensation under my feet as if like i had over 50 Needless stinging me..

I felt some hot sensation in my chest, i was struggling to breath and it dawned on me that i am having a heart attack..

I slowly moved backwards and sat on that little chair, took out my phone and dialled Cowen's number....

I tried him alot of times before he answered.

Him: Cowen here.

Me: Its Me...

Him: Ohw sorry i answered my phone without checking the caller ID..

Me: I.. I..

Him: What's wrong you sound like you are hyperventilating..

I have never had such a feeling before in my life. It was a feeling that I couldn't explain, I'm sure even a heart attack is better than what i was experiencing...

Me: I'm going.... I don't know what's wrong..

Him: try to calm down, are you still at the boutique?

Me: Please come..

Those were the only words i had manged to say before my phone dropped on the floor..

I stood up and went to sit at some corner, i even felt like i was going crazy..

Me: Please stop.. Please stop..

I was now crying, i was struggling to breath everything seemed to be moving slow.. I sat there for about 10min busy repeating those words "Please stop".." Please stop"..

I then saw the door opening, and Olona walked in.. She was really concerned when she saw me sitting there...

She quickly made her way to me, i saw her lips moving, i saw her talking but i couldn't hear a word she was saying it was almost as if like i had gone deaf.. I held on to her arm very tight, i was losing my mind and having a heart attack at the same time. Not being able to breath took the trophy, because I was starting to get a bit dizzy and weak from breathing abnormally..

Me: Make him.. Make him.. He..

She was still talking but i couldn't hear what she was saying until she stood up and helped me to stand up too..

My knees were weak, everything appeared white not only am i totally going insane, but I'm losing

my vision too.....

I don't know, but I ended up in her car and she drove to the hospital..

I was still in that state, I didn't know what was wrong with me but whatever it is, it's serious..

...

We got to the hospital and Doctors attended me immediately. It was funny because when I set foot in the hospital Building, my heart started beating normal. Although my breathing was still abnormal, but it was better than when I was at the back room of the Boutique.....

So there I was sitting on that hospital bed, with an oxygen on my mouth, and that BP cuff on my arm.. At least the doctors are gonna find out what's wrong with me..

The doctor took down all the readings from that BP machine...

Olona was pacing up and down, she was really worried.

Doctor: What really happened?

Olona: I found her cuddled up in a corner at the store room of my boutique. She looked really scared, was almost as if like something frightened her really bad...

the doctor looked at me...

Him: Have you ever been diagnosed with asthma before?

I lowered the oxygen..

Me: No

Him: Pneumonia?

Me: No

He looked at that file that he was writing on..

Him: Everything is normal, your blood pressure is not too bad. Everything seems to be fine with you..

Olona: You gotta be kidding me!

Dr: I took the readings 4 times now!

Olona: You saw how she was when I brought her here! She looked like she was about to die from a heart attack or something of that nature.

Olona seemed very upset..

Dr: What do you want me to do?

Olona: Your job!

Me: Olona come down..

She took a deep breath to calm herself down...

Her: So what do you expect us to do Doc? What if she goes home and this thing starts?

Dr: Well i can keep her here overnight to observe her..

Olona: Can you get us something who actually knows what they doing?

Dr: Mam you need to calm down..

She composed herself..

Her: I'm going to get some water.

She looked at me.

Her: Want anything?

I shook my head no, she then walked out. Now I see why Olona is with Zuko, her temper is a definite no they probably deserve each other...

The Doctor left me, and said he will come back and that the oxygen will help open up my chest...

Being In that room alone made me very paranoid,i was thinking to myself that what if Zuko walks in? What if he hurts me again?..

I was totally going insane, i was losing it for real and the sad part was that Doctors couldn't diagnose Me....

I went back to my calm state when Olona walked in with a bottle of bonaqua pump..

She sat down next to me and squeezed me tight while exhaling..

Her: You really scared me back there. If something happened to you and you.. What was i gonna say to your family?

I lowered the oxygen again..

Me: I'm sorry..

Her: What scared you soo much? Even now you still scared i can see..

I wish i can tell Olona the truth, wish i can tell her about how much of a monster her Fiance is.. But i could see it in her eyes that she loves him and i don't think she's gonna believe me..

Me: i.. Well..

She looked at me waiting for an explanation.. I might as well give her the version of the truth that Bongi created..

Me: see this scars on my head and forehead?

Her: Yes what about them?

Me: i was once attacked and badly beaten with a gun. The person who attacked me repeatedly bashed me on my head with the back of that gun..

I was now starting to be emotional, you cannot talk about this and expect not to cry.. I closed my eyes as tears fell..

Me: i cried, i apologised but the evil in him really wanted to kill me no Matter how much i was bleeding and ready to pass out he never stopped..

I could see tears in her eyes too.. She put her hand on her chest.

Her: i didn't know such happened to you. I can relate to your story very well..

Tears fell from Her eyes too..

Her: My (breaking voice)

She cleared her Throat..

Her: My ex husband. My baby daddy he tried to burn me in our house.. He put me through hell that even today those nightmares still haunt me..

I could see the tears reflecting her pain. She was deeply scard too..

Her: i thank God for Zuko. He is soo good to me and my daughter. I pray to God and thank him everyday for bringing Zuko in my life at the right time..

A part of me wanted to tell her the truth, but a part of me told me not too..

She giggled through those tears trying to shame her pain with a good emotion..

Her: i cannot believe that i am crying..

She stood up and went to get us tissues..

Her: That is why women like us should stand together. I think God brought us together for a reason.

Me: i think so too..

Her: i will give you my therapist's number and you can Make an appointment. His very good he

helped me get through this..

Me: Thank you

Her phone rang.. She looked at the caller ID and smiled..

Her: Its Zuko, sorry i have to take this..

She answered

Her: Baby i am soo glad that you called..

She got all emotional again then stood up and Walked away..

Ohhh God what do i do now?

PART 43 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:08] Ron: PART 44 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We had gone back to the boutique since the doctors couldn't find what was wrong with me..

I was happy to find Cowen waiting for us there and he looked very worried..

Cowen: Are you okay?

Me: i feel a bit better

Cowen: What really happened?

Olona: She just had a meltdown

Cowen: meltdown?

Me: I'll explain to you later

The door opened as we were standing there and Zuko walked it....my fear came rushing in again, my heart was doing beats of its own i was feeling the same way i had felt at the store room.. I watched him as he walked in, everything just started moving slow my insanity feeling came back too. Cowen held my hand and i jumped a little..

Him: Its just me..

I didn't say anything i just laid my head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around me.. Zuko walked up to Olona and hugged her..

Olona: didn't think you were gonna come now

Him: I'll drop everything for you, so where is she?

Olona pointed at me..

Olona: i was very scared when i found her in that state at the store room..

Zuko turned and looked at me, our eyes met and locked. I couldn't tell what he was thinking because his face didn't have any expression he looked at me and scared me more that i held tightly to Cowen...

Zuko: This is your assistant?

Olona: Yes, her name is Funi and Funi this is my loving Fiance Zuko..

Zuko looked at me for a while before saying something..

Zuko: Nice Meeting you Funi

So he gonna act like he doesn't know me... He then looked at Cowen.

Zuko: You look familiar

Cowen: You look familiar too.

Zuko: Zuko Mqela

Cowen: Dr Cowen.. You the CEO of MQ am i right?

Zuko: You very right.. And you come highly recommend Doc..

Cowen: I'm just good at what i do..

Zuko looked at me, then looked at Cowen..

Zuko: So now you fucking my...

He cleared his throat..

Zuko: Meant are you two a couple?

Cowen: as a matter of fact we are a couple,she is my Queen..

What is Cowen playing at???

I could see that statement made Zuko uncomfortable..

Zuko: Cherish her she's a very rare precious stone..

Cowen: You don't have to remind me...

Olona: They just look so beautiful and perfect for each other

Zuko faked a smile...

Zuko: Yes they do

Cowen: Are you ready to go sweetheart?

Me: Yes, please.

Cowen: Thank you again for taking her to the hospital

Olona: Its my pleasure, I'm just glad that she's okay..

Cowen: You guys have a good day

Olona: Bye... I'll call you Funi

Me: No problem..

We started walking away..

Zuko: Wait..

We stopped, then turned around and looked at him.

Zuko: How about we go out on a double date tomorrow night?

Olona: that sounds like a plan

Zuko looked at us..

Zuko: So what do you love birds say?

Cowen looked at me..

Cowen: What do you say babe?

I shrugged my shoulders

Zuko: Come on Funi, it'll be nice..

Olona: and it will be a great start for us..

Me: Uhm i don't know if Cowen will be busy

All attention was on Cowen now...

Cowen: i am on leave, so i will be free...

Zuko: Great we'll meet each other at that French restaurant down the road how does 19:00 sound?

Cowen: 19:00 sounds cool

Olona: Great, we'll meet each other there..

We bid them farewell and Walked out to Cowen's car.. He started driving but then pulled over after a while and looked at me..

I didn't say anything i just looked down..

Cowen: Are you scared of him?

I nodded my head yes..

Cowen: What did he do to you that made you to be this scared of him and other men as a whole?

My tears were very near, but i tried my best to hold them back..

Him: So i can't get a shot with you because of his mistakes. Is this how you gonna be funi? Punishing every man that comes your way because of your ex's sins?

Me: I'm just scared Cowen

Him: i am not him..

He sighed..

Him: Stop giving him power over your life, stop letting him control you.. The fear that he smells from you is what makes him God over your life.. You need to fight him...

Me: i cannot fight Zuko, his just too..

Him: Im not saying in that way. Fight back by showing him that you can live your life despite what he did to you..

Some of what his saying is right..

He put his hand on my chin and made me to face him..

Him: i love you and i am not going to suffer because of what he did to you...

He leaned closer and kissed..

Him: allow me to change the perception that you have about men, allow me to show you that not every man that comes to your life is meant to hurt you. Some men come to restore what was stolen or broken..

I was now in tears..

Him: Just allow me to love you please

Me: Zuko is gonna kill you..

He chuckled..

Him: No he won't...

Me: he will

Him: He doesn't know who i am, and when he finally finds out who i am he will pee in his pants..

Me: What do you mean by that?

He started driving.

Me: Cowen what do you mean by that?

Cowen: i think you should live with me now, i can protect you better when you close to me..

Cowen is scaring me a bit, who is he? Is he even a doctor?

PART 44 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:09] Ron: PART 45 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We got to Cowen's penthouse and it was something i have never seen before. I have been to beautiful houses, i even thought that Jozi and Zuko had the most beautiful houses until i saw Cowen's penthouse.. I loved everything from the furniture to the paintings on the wall.. What i had noticed was that his favourite colours were Black&white because everything was black and white. Even the casual clothes he wears always Black&white...

I slowly turned around while admiring everything..

Me: Wow...

Him: You like it?

I giggled..

Me: Are you kidding me? Ofcourse i like it i have never seen such perfection..

He came and planted a wet kiss on my neck..

Him: You should like it because this is gonna be your home from now on..

I turned around and faced him. He got my hands and kissed them..

Him: i want you to feel at home..

He looked at my body while biting his lower lip..

Him: even if you feel like walking around naked you can do that, this is your home..

Me: You are soo naughty Mr Cowen

Him: Please address me as Sean.. I'm Sean Cowen.

Me: Maybe i just like Cowen more

He pulled Me closer to him and kissed me while grabbing my Ass. I don't wanna lie, Cowen knew how to play his charming and kissing game.. I felt myself being lost in that kiss.. He spoke in between that kiss while our lips were still locked to each other..

Him: i don't wanna force you into anything, i want you to be comfortable..

He said that while taking off my tshirt... I was still intoxicated by his kiss not even Zuko has ever kissed me like that..

Me: You not forcing me into anything..

He gently squeezed my waist.

Him: Are you sure?

I nodded my head while kissing him.. He went on to plant wet kisses on my cleavage. My big cleavage was now exposed since my shirt was removed..

Him: Tell me how did he not appreciate such beauty?

He pushed me against the wall and raised my hands up while tightly pinning them against the wall.. He started talking dirty next to my ear..

Him: Do you know how much i wanna be inside of you right now? Ride you until you beg for me to stop?

Me: would that be a bad thing?

He kissed me then broke the kiss after a few seconds..

Him: Yes..

He let go of me and picked up my tshirt from the floor and handed it to me..

Him: Think you dropped your tshirt

I looked at him, is this guy crazy or what Mara? I took my tshirt without saying anything..

Him: Are you good with lasagne?

Me: Whatever

Yes i was mad, you don't just do that to a girl and leave her all high and low...

Him: i was raised by my Grandmother so i know my way around the kitchen..

Me: Whatever Cowen!

He picked me up and placed me next to the kitchen sink with his hands on the sides of my thighs..

Me: What now?

Him: There will be alot of time for fucking but now i wanna show you my love, i want you to trust me. I want you to love me without sex being involved in our relationship so you can know that i want your heart and not your body..

Me: Are you this honest or you just fronting i mean...

Him: You mean?

Me: Nothing..

I tried getting down but he had a tight grip on me..

Me: Cowen..

Him: I asked you a question what do you mean?

I looked down..

Him: i will never hurt you, and most importantly i will never raise my hand on you.. Yes there's times when you gonna make me angry to that point where i would wanna strangle you and snap your neck till you die then Bury you at a secret location where im gonna grow tomatoes on your grave and no one is gonna find you..

I laughed at that and he laughed too..

Me: Would you really do that?

Him: Naa just wanted to make you laugh

Me: Would you eat the tomatoes though?

Him: day and night..

Me: You soo heartless

He tickled me..

Him: Say that again..

I was laughing hysterically.

Me: Okay stop I'm sorry..

He stopped..

Him: That's what I wanna see, more laughing and less stressing or crying...

I looked at him.

Me: Are you serious about me? Or this is just a phase? Today you treating me like a Queen then tomorrow you bashing Me with the back of your gun on my head?

I could see that comment hit home, although he tried soo much to consume his Anger but his heavy breathing gave him away.. He touched the scar on my forehead.

Him: He did that to you?

I nodded....

Him: Okay go freshen up don't be scared to wear one of my Tshirts i will do the lasagne for us..

Wow i expected him to sympathise with me.. I wanted him to make me feel better by cussing on Zuko and making him a bad person but none of that..

Him: Heard that boo bear?

That brought me to reality...

Me: Uhm yeah..

He helped me get down, and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: You will find your way upstairs to the bathroom..

Me: i think so..

Him: And if you get a panic attack just let it be, it won't kill you..

Me: Panic attack?

Him: From how you were breathing on the phone it gave you away that you were experiencing a panic attack..

Me: No wonder why doctors couldn't find what was wrong with me..

Him: Go bath I'll tell you about it later..

I slowly walked to the stairs, but then stopped and looked at him. My fears came back, the "Panic attack" came back. He looked at me and shook his head..

Me: Cowen..

Him: No booboo you need to know that sometimes you gotta face difficult situations alone i will not always be there to hold your hand..

My tears were near, i felt like i was going crazy.. I felt like Zuko's presence was in this house.

Me: Cowen i think he is here

He folded his arms and looked at me..

Me: I'm going to die Cowen..

He said nothing just looked at me..

Me: Cowen..

Him: Go bath i will prepare us the lasagne

I looked at the stairs i was scared to go up, i was scared to be in that bathroom alone. I was scared of being consumed by that fear of Zuko wanting to kill me..

Me: Cowen I'm scared...

He took the pan out and started whistling..

Me: Cowen please..

Him: Im cooking bubu don't disturb me.. I like concentrating

He opened the fridge..

I looked at him and thought to myself that Cowen is more heartless than Zuko.. How can he not protect me when I'm scared?

PART 45 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:11] Ron: PART 46 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I did finally get the courage to go upstairs and bath. It wasn't a good situation for one to be in, because everytime when i close my eyes to splash water on my face memories of Zuko would keep on flashing...

Being alone in that bathroom was scary constantly having to look at the door hoping that he doesn't walk in, and kill me..

I promise you, living a life like this having to be scared and always look over your shoulder is devastating.....

When i was done bathing i went to Cowen's bedroom and started going through his stuff trying to find a tshirt and a boxer.. What caught my attention when i Walked into his house, was that his whole wall at the dinning area was filled with Paintings of skulls. Now i am going through his

clothes and most of them have a skull and all of them are either black or white...

Him being an EMO struck my mind, but then Cowen looks a bit mature for such things..not only did his clothes have a print of a skull on them but his duvet was black and had white skulls which really raised up alot of questions....

I put on the boxer and his tshirt, then hung my clothes on the chair and i went to meet him up for dinner downstairs.....

While i was walking down the stairs i heard him speaking to someone on the phone was on loud speaker..

Voice: So you telling me that MQ(Zuko) is now a person of interest?

Cowen: That's what I'm telling you

Voice: that guy looks harmless

Cowen: His a bit dangerous, or so he thinks he is..

Voice: i don't think the Skulls are gonna approve this, i mean we have always went after serious and really dangerous people. MQ doesn't fit in the category..

Cowen: Are you gonna do as i say or what?

Voice: It's gonna be hard but I'll try.. Anyway what did he do to you that you want us to walk ontop of him?

Him: Let's just say he..

He turned around and saw me Standing there..

Him: Shabba i have to go.

Shabba: But i still need..

Him: I'll call you don't worry

Shabba: Ayt cool man

He hung up and looked at me..

Him: Look at you, you didn't die now did you?

I walked down the stairs and went to him..

Me: What was that all about?

Him: Just my business

Me: What business is that?

Him: Its known as "none of your business"

I rolled my eyes..

Him: Shall we?

He pointed at the small table and there were pillows on the floor next to the table. The lasagne was there with plates and wine, looked a bit cosy and nice..

Me: This looks nice

Him: it better taste nice too, i put my foot in it..

We went and sat down..

Him: Maybe we can go get you a few clothes tomorrow..

He dished up for me..

Me: That would be great.

He also poured wine in the glasses for us.. I went and tasted the lasagne.

Me: This is good

Him: My Grandmother's recipe

Me: Leme guess, it's a secret recipe?

Him: You took the words right out of my mouth..

Me: Tastes really good though...

Him: Thank you.. And what else do you wanna do tomorrow?

Me: i wanna go and visit my father at the hospital..

Him: is he sick?

Me: Something like that..

Him: Either his sick or he is not sick, there's no "Something like that"

Me: He is sick.. Happy now?

Him: Im ecstatic..

Me: Are you always this cocky?

Him: This is me just being me..

Me: Okay.. Can i ask something?

Him: You can ask anything

Me: Do you think your family is gonna like me?

Him: Why you ask that?

Me: i mean Zuko's family they...

Him: They?

Me: Just didn't like me.

Him: Why didn't he drop his family and become an orphan?

Me: So if your family don't like me you gonna drop them and become an orphan..

Him: Yes. I am not gonna marry my family and have kids with them am i?

I laughed..

Me: You just crazy ain't you?

Him: i try not to be..

We continued eating our dinner which was very delicious, and then when we were done eating we put the left overseas in the fridge and washed the dishes... After washing the dishes, we went upstairs.

Him: Im just gonna take a quick shower

I was sitting on top of the bed..

Me: Okay

He took off his tshirt and he had a nice body but what really caught my attention was this big tattoo of a skull on his back..

I wanna ask him about that but, then maybe he doesn't want me knowing about it. So I'm just gonna wait on him to say something..

He went to take a shower while i occupied myself with the TV so I don't get paranoid and scared....

he came back after a while and dressed up, didn't even care that i was in the room,didn't even look like he was embarrassed for me to see him naked..

When he was done, he came to join me in bed..

Me: You smell nice

Him: compliments to my shower gel

He came closer and tried to kiss me but my phone rang..

Him: ignore it

We started kissing with his hand tightly squeezing my thighs. As much as i tried to ignore my phone, but it just didn't stop ringing...

Me: Could be important

Him: You'll call them later

Me: i have to take it..

Him: Fine

I Stretched out my hand and got it, surprisingly it was my grandmother... I answered.

Me: Hello

She was crying..

Me: What's wrong grams?

Her: Ukhohlakele funi! (you are evil)

That statement took me by surprise..

Me: huh?

Her: My son is dead because of you!!

Me: What? U Papa ushonile? (my father has passed on)

Her: You should be celebrating with your white boyfriend that you live with now...

How and where did she get that info?

Me: i don't know what you talking about..

Her: The Mqela family told us what happened, they told us everything. They wanted to marry you and put you threw school but wena ngoba ugcwele ubufebe you ran away with your white boyfriend. Your Father suffered a heart attack after such disappointment from you and died, he couldn't handle the shame that you brought into the family. you killed him!!

I dropped my phone, i couldn't listen to those hurtful words anymore i was Shaking, i was crying,

the panic attack came back full force which was triggered by Me still hearing her cussing....

Cowen: What's wrong?

I was rocking myself back and forth with my hands covering my ears..

He picked up my phone...

Cowen: Who is this?

I don't know what my Grandma said to him but he hunged up..

I was truly broken that my Grandma would believe the Mqelas like that..

PART 46 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:12] Ron: PART 47 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Nothing could amount to the pain that i was feeling Deep inside. I was breathing but inside i was dead. The fact that i was forbidden to attend my father's funeral killed me more, especially because my Grandma and the Mqela family have poisoned my other relatives against me that i am the reason behind my father's sudden death. Only me, my father, and Zuko will know the truth.. My father died because his heart couldn't keep up with the parasite that Zuko and his goons put in his heart..

I refused to eat, i refused to sleep, or even talk. I was numb, i was emotionless i felt nothing it was almost as if like i wasn't living anymore.. My mother died when i was young, now my father is dead too i am practically alone now..

Yes Cowen is always there for me but what if he becomes like Zuko and turns on me.....

It was a quiet day and i was sitting on the couch, just starring at the small coffee table that is what i have doing for the past 30minutes..

Cowen came to me with a tray of food, he sat on the coffee table facing me..

Him: i made you something to eat

I didn't say anything i continued starring at what i was starring at..

He exhaled..

Him: I'll just put the food here incase you feel like eating...

I still kept quiet. He stood up and put the food on the table and Walked away while singing..

Him: "Love yourz, there's no such thing as a life that's better than yourz..no such thing as a life that's better than yourz"

Those words hit home. How can Cowen say that? I stood up..

Me: You selfish!!

He stopped and looked at me..

Me: How can you say that? There's people who were born with a silver spoon in their mouth.. There's people who live nice lives who don't come to experience what i have experienced and then you gonna boldly sing that there's no life that's better than mine?

Him: And i still stand by my words..

I felt tears coming....

Me: You know even though Zuko is a jerk but he never danced ontop of my pain like you doing..

Him: Where is your Zuko?

He started looking sideways

Him: Ya i ain't see the nigga here..

Me: Its over Cowen you hear me? I'm done!

I started approaching the door and he quickly came and blocked my way..

Him: You not going nowhere

Me: Get out of my way!!!

He said nothing but continued slightly pushing me off as i tried to reach for the door..

Me: i hate men Cowen!! I hate Zuko and i hate you too!!

He said nothing just looked at me..

I was now crying..

Me: Yeah i hate you!! I said it i hate you..

I felt like giving him a piece of my mind, and that's what i did..

Me: He took the only thing that mattered to me... I have no life without my father, how am i gonna live alone? What am i gonna do?.. My father has always loved me and sheltered me and what's more sad is that my family blame me for his death, they hate me Cowen they always wanted me out of the picture..

No matter how much he was trying to let my pain and broken state not to affect him but i could see that Deep down this was hurting him too..

Me: i might as well kill myself too,why am i still here??

I shrugged my shoulders.

Me: i don't know why I'm still here..

I wiped my tears..

Me: Cowen can you please kill Zuko for me? Can you please kill him for all the pain he has caused me?

He shook his head no.

Him: i wanna kill him soo bad, believe me i do but that would be easy.. I want him to feel the same pain that he has put you through..

I looked at him with my eyes full of tears..

Him: The only way to break him is for you to get back up and live your life.. What you doing now will make him happy, he will delight in seeing you breaking down because that's what he wants to see, you slowing dying.. Boo bear the only way you gonna defeat this guy is to never allow him to break you like this..

I cannot believe Cowen right now, i don't wanna hear what his telling me now but i wanna live in a world free of Zuko and he gonna tell me this shit?? I want him to kill Zuko and he gonna give me the 3rd degree...

Me: So you not gonna kill him?

Him: No i am not..

I was hurt that Cowen doesn't wanna understand me or what I'm going through right now..

Me: Wow

I walked away upstairs, i was hurt i was broken.. I got to the bedroom and threw myself on the bed and started crying like there's not tomorrow.....

.

After crying for what seemed to be like forever, i got out of bed and went to get some tissue to wipe my tears.. I opened his drawer trying to find more tissues and that's when i bumped into a stack of cash and 4 car keys.. I took the stack of cash and it looked like alot of money..

I took it and took the dodge caliber car keys...

I went and washed my face then after i Walked downstairs....

Brown had came to drop my clothes earlier, i was wearing a boob tube tshirt with denim short and my Addidas silver Sneakers..

I got downstairs at the lounge and there was no sign of Cowen....

I went straight to the elevator and went downstairs. I got to the parking lot and saw all his cars there, i went to the dodge got in and started driving...

I am not much of a good driver but i ain't a bad driver either..

I cruized around with his dodge until i made a stop at some bar, that is what i exactly needed something to drink. Say whatever you wanna say but i always find alcohol as my comforter and a better way to ease my pain..

I got out of the dodge and made my way to the bar...

I got in there and It was mostly men which was awkward but i don't blame them because the waitresses serve alcohol in their bras and bum shorts only..

I made my way to the counter and some of the men there were starring at my thick thighs as if like I'm some cheap trash..

I got at the counter and sat on bar stool.. The bar woman came to me..

Her: Good afternoon can i get you something?

I looked around and having those men starring at me like that was very uncomfortable... I took out the stack of cash and handed it to her..

Me: Keep those drinks coming..

She looked at that cash with her eyes wide open and her jaw dropping.....

Her: That's alot of money..

Me: That's why i say keep the drinks coming..

She took the cash and kept the drinks coming..

I was now getting drunk and feeling very comfortable...i was ontop of that counter dancing with all those men admiring me and my body.. I was dancing to "Work_Rihanna"

I really felt important, from all the attention i was getting from those men, that was something that made me feel important, it eased my pain.. I looked at the bar woman.

Me: Give everyone drinks on me

Her: Mam get down you drunk!

Me: I'm not drunk, you drunk!! Now give all this men drinks!!

They cheered me..

Her: Mam!

Me: Oops i didn't hear that..

Her: Get down!

Me: Sorry but i can't hear you..

One of the men came and got me off the counter and put me down...

Him: Why don't you come and play pool with me and my home boys?

He said that while running his hand on my thighs..

Bar woman: Trey please don't start trouble not tonight..

He gave her a death stare..

Trey: if you know what's good for you will stay out of my business!

The bar woman said no more. From how People In the bar were scared of Trey i could tell that he has caused alot of trouble here, he is a respected and feared bad boy here.. His friends were harassing the waitresses and he was all up on me.. He squeezed my cheeks which was very painful..

Him: So what do you say?

Me: sounds tempting

Him: ive been watching you all day and i must say i really wanna know you

Me: i wanna know you too

He loosened his grip and kissed me i didn't hesitate to kiss him back.. After a while we broke the kiss..

Him: What is a beautiful lady doing here?

Me: Well just trying to have fun..

He was very cute i couldn't stop kissing him..

Him: Your boyfriend let you go out on your own?

Me: Well my boyfriend Cowen is a pussy..

Him: Cowen?

I giggled

Me: Yes Dr Cowen, Sean Cowen..

He stepped away from me..

Him: You dating Braga?

Me: Who is Braga?

He whistled and his friends gave him attention..

Him: boys let's get out of here..

Me: Wait where you going?

Him: stay away from me..

He started walking away, i grabbed his arm and he pushed me hard that i fell ontop of some table i won't lie that hurt..

Me: Ouch!!

I tried getting up but it was hard since I was drunk.. Then i heard a familiar voice talking...

Voice: Next time be careful who you push!

I looked at the direction of the voice and i couldn't believe what i saw...was Cowen he was with what seemed to be a squad..

They were wearing black denim skinny jeans, white shirts, black knee boots and caps that had skulls.. His squad was composed of both men and women they were also carrying axes...

Trey started stepping back..

Him: Braga!!.. I.. Sw..

He looked so very scared of Cowen , i swear i became sober the same time..

PART 47 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:17] Ron: PART 48 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I thought that i was gonna see those axes flying around and people being slayed and cut into pieces. I thought i was gonna see a horror movie live, some Saw or Wrong Turn. I won't lie i was very scared and so were the people in at the Bar. Cowen and his squad, looked like those kind of people one wouldn't dare to mess with them..

He walked up to Trey, my heart was down on my knees at that moment, i was scared for myself and Trey only fate would know what Cowen would do to Trey...

He had someone from his squad, come and take the Axe from him..

That was a good sign, showed that his not gonna use it on Trey who looked very scared...

Trey: i.. I.. Swear Braga i didn't know she was yours..

Cowen looked at him for a while, not smiling, not laughing, not showing any emotion whatsoever.

Cowen: You just pissed on yourself..

That was a down right embarrassment. The baddest bully in the bar being scared to a point where he even pissed on himself...

That surely is gonna make everyone lose respect for him. Cowen looked at me, i was busy trying to pull down my shorts which i don't know why i was doing that because they won't miraculously be long... He signalled to me that we must go, i didn't protest..

What i didn't understand was how he found me because I didn't leave a note or receive any call from him.....

We got outside and they all bid each other farewell and went to their respective cars. They were driving Black SUVs with the skull logo at the sides of the SUVs.....

it was now just only me and him standing there his squad had left. I couldn't look him in the eye, i was scared and very ashamed of what i did..

He stretched out his hand to Me..

Him: Let's go home.

I Stretched out my hand to him too and we went to his SUV....

No words were exchanged in the car, i would only steal looks at him when he is not looking at me but as soon as he looks in my direction i would look away...

I realised right there that Cowen might not be who i think he is..

We got home and went upstairs to the bedroom. I sat down on the bed while he paced up and down like a parent thinking of how to punish their 16 year old daughter who snuck out of the house to go partying and drinking....

He stopped pacing and looked at me, his look pierced through my skin and it was making me very uncomfortable and more scared...

Him: My car keys please..

I stood up and got them out of my pocket and handed them to him. He looked at my hand that was Shaking vigorously before taking the keys...

Him: Next time you wanna steal one of my cars just know that they have a tracker,i will find you no matter where you travel with them.

I didn't say anything i sat down on the bed again while looking down...

Him: if you were in my situation what would you do?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: Go bath I'll make you some coffee..

I stood up and started walking to the bathroom but he blocked my way,i could sense that he was starring at my body..

Him: Im gonna give you something that you went to that bar for, I'm gonna give it you soo much that even tomorrow you don't go around marketing that sexy body of yours in places that you shouldn't be at..

He came closer and pulled me closer to him..

He lifted my chin up and started kissing me. At first i was a bit tense and all that but that smooth kiss ended up relaxing me..

He went on to undressing me, while I helped him undress too until he was left with his boxers and i was only left with my bra and underwear...

He was starring at my body again busy admiring it..

Him: Do you think that Trey was gonna use protection?

Wow what a question..

Me: i don't know..

Him: i don't think so

He continued kissing me and his hand made its way inside my underwear.. He slipped one finger inside me which was a bit painful i gasped.. He went to insert another finger now that was painful.

Me: Ahh Cowen!

Him: if you think that is painful, wait until I reap your pussy apart..

He picked me up and pinned me against the wall he was stronger than i thought to be carrying all of my heavy weight..

Him: as much as i wanna make this a painful experience for you but I won't, i said I'll never hurt you and I'm standing by my words... He put me down while i was still against the wall and he went down on me. He took off my underwear and just started sucking me till I lost my mind, till I felt like i was very close to coming...

Him: Not yet

He took off his boxers and picked me up again with my legs around his waist and he entered

me..

It wasn't as painful as i thought it was gonna be, and he just went for it..

I was screaming his name, he was moaning.. I had my nails deep in his skin was just an intense session that not even Zuko ever fucked me like that.....

We made love that night until i felt my Vagina giving up on me that's when we stopped..

I was soo tired from all of that, that i passed out immediately after we finished.. We were laying side by side with my hands around his neck and his hand running smoothly on my naked body..

For the first time in my life i slept like a baby, having him right next to me made me to feel safe...

I woke up the next morning and he wasn't next to me. I was in pain, but most of all i was very hungover.

I got out of bed and my head was banging. I went to the bathroom and washed my face then brushed my teeth..

I put on my gown and made my way downstairs...

Cowen was sitting on the couch with alot of medical textbooks and his laptop ontop of his thighs. He even had his spectacles on that's how serious he looked...

I stood there looking at him while smiling i didn't wanna disturb him as yet...

I thought that moment would last forever until he noticed me Standing there...

He smiled and took off his spectacles.

Him: Good morning

I was blushing a little.

Me: Morning

We had awkward moment between us after greeting each other.

He cleared his throat.

Him: i wanted to make you something to eat but, unfortunately I'm swapped.. I have alot of studying to do i have a clinical assessment coming up in 2 days..

Me: Its okay I'll make myself something to eat, and do you want some too?

Him: No thank you, coffee will do for me.

Me: If you say so

We continued looking at each other while smiling, he didn't have the widest smile, just a little curve at the corner of his mouth, which made him look more cute..

Me: I'll just go and..

Him: ya go and do that..

I walked to the kitchen but then stopped halfway..

Me: Uhm Cowen..

He turned and looked at me

Me: I'm sorry about yesterday i shouldn't have taken your car and your money..

Him: it's okay we all go through that phase where we think alcohol with ease our pain, but the most important thing is to not loose yourself in the process..

Me: Thank you for understanding

Him: i only understood yesterday, but next time i won't understand..

Me: Okay Braga

He gave me a weird look..

Him: Its Cowen to you.

Me: i can't call you Braga?

Him: No..

Me: Why?

He closed his laptop..

Him: Im never gonna study am i?

Me: Ohw sorry

I went to the kitchen and prepared myself a sandwich. As i was moving around i kept on looking at him trying to figure him out and what he is..

Me: Okay he is a doctor who is specializing in the matters of the heart (Whispering)

At times i wouldn't even look where im going i would bump into things then he would look at me, then go back to studying...

I leaned over on the kitchen counter while starring at him.

Me: Who are you Mr Braga? (Whispering)

PART 48 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:19] Ron: PART 49 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

The day that I wasn't looking forward too came. The day of my father's funeral. The fact that i wasn't gonna attend his funeral hit me hard, i was wishing that i could just sleep the whole day and never wake up. I really wanted to be there to bid him farewell, i wanted to see him for the last time in the coffin. I wanted to be on that burial site and see his coffin going down, so i could have closure that i will never see him ever again..

Unlike me, Jozi was allowed to attend just imagine i am going to hear about my father's funeral from my cousin...

It was around 8am, i was standing in front of the bathroom looking at myself in the mirror crying. I had no intentions in living anymore, I really wanted to die..

I had just had finished bathing, Cowen and i we were going to visit his family they were having a get together and he thought that kind of company will make me feel better..

He came in the bathroom while singing..

Him: "heaven, must be missing an Angel, missing one Angel.... Because you here with me"..

I faced the other way and wiped my tears because i didn't want him to see me crying..

Him: You not ready yet?

Me: i will be there now now (sniffing)

Him: You still have the towel wrapped around your body,your hair is still wet..

Me: i will be there Cowen..

Him: Im giving you 10min

Me: Fine

I heard footsteps approaching my way, all i wanted was for him not to crowd me i need some time alone..I just need to be alone right now.

I felt his strong hands at the sides of my arms, and his soft pinkish lips planting a wet kiss at the back of my neck. He squeezed me a bit tight...

Him: I'll wait for you downstairs

I nodded my head.. He kissed me again and went..

I wiped my tears then went to dress up. I wore a long dress, with my sneakers. I put on my doek just covered my hair in style. I put on big hoop earrings and a bit of make up. I put on my short Jacket i really wanted to make a good impression heard Cowen's grandmother is old you know

how old people are...

I walked downstairs and he was sitting on the couch drinking orange juice, he couldn't take his eyes off me..

Him: You look great..

Me: Thank you, you look good too

He did look good in his black and white outfit..

Him: Ready to go?

I looked at my dress one more time..

Me: Yes i believe so..

Him: Let's go then

He took his car keys, and i had my small bag with me.. We walked out to the elevator while holding hands.

As soon as the elevator closed he pulled Me closer to him and kissed me.. The way he kisses me still makes me a bit dizzy.

Me: What was that all about?

Him: Just finding you very sexy in that long dress..

Me: You saying that just make me smile...

Him: is it working?

Me: kinda

I said that while smiling.....

We got to his car, and we drove to his grandmother's place...

I was really nervous, what if we get there and his grandmother doesn't like me. I have a really bad experience with in laws. He noticed that i was a bit nervous, he took my hand and kissed it...

Him: You'll be fine

I smiled at him..

I was expecting us to go to a white neighbourhood, but to my surprise we were in a black neighbourhood. I am not talking about suburbs i am talking about a hood, ghetto, kasi one way..

Me: Uhm Cowen?

He looked at me

Me: Are we lost?

Him: No we not lost..

He parked his car next to this beautiful small house. It wasn't that small, looked like a 6room house. I won't lie it was perfect, had a beautiful garden, pavement and 2 garages. Other expensive cars were parked next to the house..

We got out of the car and made our way in..

Some people where chilling outside drinking beer, it was only black people...

Cowen greeted a few then we made our way inside the house..

The inside of the house was beautiful too, marble walls, White wall-cupboards it was too beautiful to be in that hood..

We found 3 women cooking at the kitchen..

Cowen: We home

They turned and looked at him, started making noise they looked very happy to see him you know how black people do when it's a family gathering..

They came up to him and hugged him..

Lady 1: sbusiso we happy to see you..

I looked at him confused and he gave me that "i will explain later look"..

Lady 2: Kodwa why don't you come and visit? If it wasn't for this family gathering we were never gonna see you right?

Cowen: i just just have alot going on that's why i hardly come to visit..

They looked at me, i was looking down didn't know what to say..

Cowen: Ohh this is my girlfriend Funi..

Lady 3: Shame bona unamahloni yena u nana (look at how shy she is)

Lady 2: Akasese muhle yena u putsununu ka Sbusiso (she's beautiful)

Cowen: Let's cut it you really making her more shy..

He looked at me.

Him: This are my Aunties, all this 3 women helped my Grandma in raising me..

Aunt 1: i used to change his nappies before he became this young man that he is today, ngeke ung'tshele nex ngalo bhuti (you cannot tell me nothing about this brother here)

She said that while lifting up a Hunter's dry bottle and drinking..

I was still shocked at how Cowen is white but have a black family...

Aunt 2: Sbusiso you can go greet your uncles in the lounge they been waiting for you..

Cowen: Shit!

Aunt 3: ya shit won't help you hamba! So you can explain to uMalume jabu why you never visit home..

He started walking to the lounge i followed him...

Aunt 1: hai bo sisi ucabanga ukuthi uyaphi? (where do you think you going)

I looked at her...

Her: buya uzokera ama carrots (come and peel the carrots)

I looked at Cowen he shrugged his shoulders..

Aunt 1: Buya phela makoti plus ngathi uSoft ngizokugugisa amabhodo amakhulu (come plus you look soft i will make you carry the big pots)

I looked at those carrots and they were alot,i got tired already

PART 49 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:20] Ron: PART 50 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Fortunately for me i did not peel the carrots on my own had a bit of help from the same Aunt who asked me to peel them. I really enjoyed being in the company of Cowen's Aunties, they free spirited, they talk about anything, they very funny and just nice to be with...

The door opened as we were still busy and Some woman walked in. She looked a bit old, but not that old. She had long beautiful soft natural hair, she was dark skinned, slim body and was wearing a nice outfit...

Aunt 1: Mama k, you are back.

Mama k: Agh we went all around town but didn't get much.

Aunt 2: kubi ke lokho ngoba thina siyacala ngama salad (that's bad because we are starting with the salads)

Mama k: That's better i mean by 12:00 i want everyone to be holding a plate of food..

She looked at the the other Aunt that was drinking...

Mama k: kodwa Thenjiwe uzopheka zona sowuqala ukudakwa (Thenjiwe are you sure you gonna be able to cook since you have started drinking)..

Thenji: Aww sengenzi manje ngoba uyazi ngiyalishaya ibhodo sdakwa or not(What have i done now, you know that I'm a good cook)...

Mama k: asazi but please don't burn my meat you don't know how expensive it is...

Aunt 2: Mbulelo and his friends are at the grill they have started with the ribs..

Mama k: at least someone is awake..

She looked at me...

Her: and then cover page, introduction ubani ke lo? (who is this)..

Thenji: table of contents page 3 Autobio abasemaphepheni bathi umakoti wakho (It's your daughter in law)

Mama k: Umakoti wami? (my daughter in law)

Aunt 1: phecelezi ezika sbusiso kusho intatheli (It's sbusiso's gf)

Mama k: Ohw uSbusiso ukhona? (sbusiso is here)

Thenji: Yebo uhleli eLongue nabo malume (his in the lounge with the uncles)

She looked at me again....

Her: Make me a cup of tea, I'll be in my bedroom 2 door to your right i need to read you miss cover page..

She then looked at Thenji..

Mama k: akuyeke ukudakwa bo upheke! (stop drinking and start cooking)...

Mama k: Hau mama k what did i do to you?

Mama k did not say anything she walked to the lounge...

Thenji: Kanti ngimenzeni bo? (what did i do to her)

The other Aunties laughed..

Thenji: Sbongile ningahleki no khabo (Sbongile and Khabo don't laugh).....

She looked at me.

Thenji: You should pour whiskey in that cup of tea so she can get drunk and sleep a little..

We laughed..

Aunt Khabo was the one helping me with the tea situation because apparently Mama k is fussy and wants things done a certain way..

She doesn't do well with your typical tea bags, she usually drinks Earl Grey with warm milk she cannot process powder milk.

She doesn't do well with white sugar she wants Brown sugar, i was already getting a headache from all those instructions..

After making her tea that was accompanied by Choice assorted biscuits, i took the Tray and made my way to her bedroom. I passed the lounge and the uncles were making noise while watching soccer and drinking some beers...

I got to her room and knocked.

Her: Come in..

I opened and Walked in while being extra careful so that the tray doesn't fall or the tea doesn't spill..

She was sitting on the bed, and Cowen was sitting on that small dressing table Chair..

Cowen: Let me help you with that..

He stood up and came to me then held the Tray for me, while I closed the door. I then took the Tray back and we happened to stare in each other's eyes while smiling, and i ended up blushing... Mama k cleared her Throat..

We went to her, Cowen took the small chair and brought it closer so i could put the tray on it..

Mama k: dankie..

I stood there next to Cowen.. She took one biscuit, before she could take a bite she looked at us..

Her: manje why are you two standing like you are about to be married, i can't even think straight you making me dizzy please sit down..

We sat down on the bed..

Mama k: So funi Cowen was telling me about you..

I didn't say anything i looked down this woman intimidates me..

Her: Are you guys serious about your relationship?

We looked at each other and replied...

Us: We are..

Mama k: before we go far with this conversation let me introduce myself...

She drank her tea, then put the cup down..

Her: i am Martha Kunene, but they call me Mama k. I raised Cowen since he was a baby..

She went on..

Her: i am a social worker, and i also used to volunteer at some homeless shelter in town. There was this young girl think 16 years old. She was a troubled teen, she carried alot of heaviness in her heart.. She came to the shelter because she had ran away from home, her Uncle used to rape her and her Aunt acted like she didn't know or see what was happening.. Unfortunately the little girl her whose name was Karina fell pregnant and when she started showing her Aunt asked who is the father, She told her Aunt that her Uncle is the father. The Uncle was asked and he denied so her Aunt beat her almost to death that she ran away from home..

This was getting very deep...

Her: When she came to the shelter she was dirty, smelling, she had on dirty clothes looked like she didn't bath for a very long time. She told us her story, and that after she had ran away from home she had nowhere to go so she started sleeping on the streets were she was also raped and beaten..

Miraculously the baby she was carrying was still alive she was 8 months pregnant when she came to the shelter..

She stayed with us until she gave birth, but died after a few minutes because of some complications. She gave birth to a baby boy whom she named "Sean Cowen". Since there was no one to take care of him, i adopted him and named him "sbusiso" because he was a blessing to me but i promised myself that I won't change his name from Sean Cowen to Sbusiso Kunene because i wanted to honour and respect her mother.....

After telling that story, there was a bit of silence we were just sniffing that really hit me deep inside i didn't know about that Part of Cowen's life..

I can just imagine his mother going through all of all that, she was a strong woman... Sometimes you think you have it hard in life, but other people have it more hard..

PART 50 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:21] Ron: PART 51 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I only hear about such things or see them in the movies, but i never really knew that there's people who go through such. For Cowen's mother to have gone through such and at the end managed to keep her Son alive inside her tummy truly is amazing. I can only imagine how Cowen feels knowing that his grandfather is also his Father, it's very heartbreaking. I can imagine him not knowing his real family, having to grow up in a black neighbourhood as a white person, having to accept mama k as his own despite the colour of his skin. I'm sure he faced

alot of racism, discrimination and bullying..

When we had all settled down and finished shedding a few tears Mama k was the first one to break the ice...

Her: Funi i think you should accompany me to the mall, i need to buy some fetta cheese i forgot to buy some while i was still at the mall..

She then giggled..

Her: I'm getting old Mara ain't i?

I looked at her this woman has the most biggest heart ever. Yes she's strict, she doesn't take shit but what i have noticed is that, people who are like that are the ones with big hearts they care and love truly unlike quiet people those ones are deadly...

Cowen: You guys might not find me here when you get back..

Mama k: uyaphi? (where are you going)

He cleared his throat...

Him: cousin Vusi is coming and we gonna drive around...

Mama k looked at him, with her hands at the sides of her waist..

Her: Sbusiso awukaqedi ne hour ula ekhaya already sowugcwala inaga yonke le (hasn't been an hour since you got here and already you wanna be all over this hood)

Him: ah mama you know cousin Vusi and i grew up together, it won't be right if i go back to my place without spending time with him..

Mama k: hai yenza lokhu obana ngathi ku right for wena (do what you think is right for you)..

Cowen: Hau sowuyakwata kanjalo (so you gonna get angry just like that)

I must say that Cowen speaking an African language was just surprising i mean you wouldn't expect such from him especially if you see him you'll think his Afrikaans, the one of Dutch origin..

Mama k: asambe funi (let's go Funi)

She held my hand and we walked out with Cowen following us....

As we was approaching the kitchen i heard some disturbing noise coming from there, think i heard some girls making noise.....

We got to the kitchen and my assumptions weren't wrong, it was 2 girls who looked like they were of my age group.. The only difference between me and them is that bona they looked wide, you couldn't miss that part because they were holding dumpies and their outfits were a no no....

They were wearing sports bras and bumshorts with All stars. They also looked like they haven't slept the previous day, although they were dancing and making noise with their scratchy voices making noise but you couldn't miss that they looked tired..

Girl 1: kodwa cishe safa Mara yazi (we almost died)

The Aunties seemed to be entertaining them.. The bumshorts covered half of their butts, and they had huge cleavages behind those sports bras, bigger than mine..

Thenji: kodwa where were you guys dancing last night?

Girl 2: ehh besjaiva kude sisi ngithi umdidi bowuhamba kphela (we were very far busy dancing and Shaking our assess)..

They started vibrating their assess..

Girl 1: You see Moss when we started doing this imali ingena left and right, even alcohol..

The Aunties were busy cheering them up, that they only noticed us standing there after a while.

Girl 1: Eish mama..

Mama k: kodwa uyaswabisa Dlozi (you are an embarrassment Dlozi)

She looked down as if like she was really ashamed or faking it, i couldn't really read her expression..

Mama k: I'm not gonna say anything anymore, you go all around the neighbourhood shaming the kunene surname. Do you know how painful it is when i walk around and hearing people talking bad things about my daughter?

So she is Cowen's sister....

Mama k: i won't even say anything to you anymore, i swear i am tired Dlozi maybe your brother will say something but mina I'm done..

The friend was busy looking at Cowen and blinking alot while smiling and blushing too.. I looked at Cowen and he looked disgusted..

Friend: Hau sbuda you won't even say hi to Me?

Cowen looked at her from head to toe then clicked his tongue.. He turned and kissed me, this guy Mara wasn't even afraid of his grandmother...

Cowen: I'll see you later, call me when you feel uncomfortable and All that..

Me: i will..

He gently squeezed my cheek..

Him: i love you

Me: i love you too..

He looked at mama k..

Him: Ma I'll see you later I'm going to cousin Vusi and we gonna meet nama Gents and do a bit of catching up..

Mama k: Its okay just don't get in trouble i know you and vusi..

Cowen: I'm 30 ma.. I have grown from that..

He is 30 and i am 22, i mean 8years is not thaaaaaat bad..

He kissed Mama k on the cheek and winked at me then left..

Friend: Yoh Dlozi manje yini ngo brother wakho angasibulisi? (Dlozi what's with your brother not greeting us)

Dlozi: uyazi Moss nawe my brother thinks highly of himself..

Mama k: Voetsek Dlozi go bath and dress up! Your uncles are in the lounge, when I get back i wanna find you dressed up and clean..

Dlozi: Yes mama

They started walking to the room with her friend, as soon as they passed us mama k hit them at their backs while kicking them too..

Her: niyangidina!! (you two disgust me)

They ran to the bedroom.. Mama k looked at the Aunties..

Mama k: yini enifundisa labantwana ukungcola (you the ones who are teaching this kids filth)

They didn't say anything they just looked down..

I swear i look at mama k and she reminds me of mam'ruby from generations the only thing missing is a shebeen....

She then looked at me..

Her: Miss cover page asambe (miss cover page let's go)

This woman intimidates me alot, she doesn't take shit at all especially when i saw her beating Dlozi and her friend i got scared a little.....

We got to her red Land Rover and she started driving...

She was driving a 2015 Land Rover off which still looked good. Her leather seats were engraved "Mama k" and so were her number plates.. She was rolling with an Samsung S7 too ya this woman is rich or Cowen is taking care good of her especially her house too it really didn't belong in that neighbourhood...

Her: This children will make me catch a case and i am too young for that...

I didn't say anything, i was very scared of her..

She looked at me and gave me a side smile..

Her: Do you believe me when i say I'm young?

She looked like she was in her early 60s the was traces of white hair kodwa she was taking good care of herself..

Me: i believe you..

I was on my phone busy halarig at Cowen on WhatsApp and he was taking forever to reply

.....WHATSAPP.....

Me: Babe

Me: Cowen!!

Me: Cowen!!

Me:!!!

Me:!!!

[AFTER 5MIN]

Cowen: Sorry i was driving, wad up?

Me: Your mom or Grandma scares me...

Him: Lol

Me: Its not funny

Him: She's like that but underneath all that she's a big softy..

Me: Are you serious? doesn't look like that..

[AFTER 2MIN]

Cowen: Boo bear i have to go, I'll call you later. Cousin Vusi called ama Gents and we about to unwind at his place everything is set..

Me: Okay

Him: i love you Mrs Kunene

Me: i love you too..

....

I put my phone away and mama k was concreting on the road, i also didn't say anything it's hard to start a random conversation with this woman..

PART 51 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:22] Ron: PART 52 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Mama k and i got everything we needed at the mall, such as more vegetables, spices, sauces etc..

When we were done, we went to milky Lane just got ourselves some ice creams...

Mama k: I'm getting old for this shopping thing...

My answers mostly to her statements were "Yes".. "No".. "i agree".. Or I'll just giggle and smile..

Her: You not talkative are you?

Me: Not really

Her: do you say more than 3 words?

Me: i just don't talk much.

Her: unamahloni? (are you shy)

Me: Sort of..

Her: hai ke that has to go, you see how crazy we are in this family?

I nodded my head..

Her: How are things between you and sbusiso?

Me: Cowen and i we are fine..

Him: Ohw you refer to him as Cowen..

Me: i hope that's not a bad thing

Her: Not at all, i do Want him to carry on using his mother's surname

I went back to my ice cream..

Her: You seem very nice Funi, and you know what they say about nice people. They the ones who carry alot of pain..

I didn't like where this conversation was going..

Her: i am a social worker so i can see right through you..

I didn't say anything i just looked down..

Her: Give me your phone

I unlocked it and gave it to her..

Her:That's my number don't hesitate to call me when you wanna talk, even about the weather i am available for any kind of talk..

I laughed..

Her: even if you miss your period call me..

My laugh vanished..

Her: aha did i hit a nerve?

I didn't know what to say because Cowen and i we haven't been using protection and I'm currently not on contraception..

Her: Funi is the something you wanna tell me?

I shook my head no...

Her: Did sbusiso score?

I cleared my throat...

Me: We just haven't been using pro...protection..

She clapped once..

Her: So you not sure if you pregnant?

I nodded

Her: I'm glad we had this talk so now you can take precautions on what you eat and all that..

She gave me a weird look..

Her: You guys are fast, I'm sure you haven't been dating that for that long and already you wanna be parents.. Nenze ke nishade (you must get married).....

What mama k said really got to me.. I mean the is a possibility that I might be pregnant. I didn't

really think of asking him to use a condom that night it was a Hit of the moment, i was drunk and everything happened soo fast...

Her: We better get going dear, it's already late..

We stood up and went..

All the way back to the hood i was thinking of this pregnancy issue, what if i really am pregnant. Not that i would abort, but i don't think I'm ready to be someone's mother i mean i have alot of shit going on already and i need to fix me first before i can take care of another human being.....

We got to the hood and it looked like everyone was having fun now..

Dlozi and her friend had changed into more appropriate outfits and they had their camping chairs on the stoep together with their dumpies..

Other people were dancing, looked like everyone was Having fun..

Dlozi: It's Funi right?

Me: uhm Yes

She extended her hand to Me..

Her: I'm Dlozi sbusiso's sister..

Me: Nice to meet you

She was all smiles with me, didn't look like a bad person at all..

Her: Come sit with us, sitting with old people can be a big bore..

Mama k gave them a serious look..

Dlozi: We won't make her drink mama..

Mama k: i don't want any issues..

Dlozi: You won't get any

Her: Good!

She then looked at me...

Mama k: i will get you a chair and some cool drink..

Me: Thank you mama k

She went to the house and got me a chair and a cool drink...

Dlozi: So i hear that you are sbusiso's gf?

Me: Yes i am..

Her: Nice for how long have you two been dating?

Me: Not that long..

Dlozi: Okay..

Her friend cleared her Throat.

Dlozi: Ohw this is my friend Tamara..

Tamara: Its about time!.. Hi Funi

Me: Hi Tamara..

Tamara: So you dating my ex huh?

Dlozi: Tamara

Tamara: What? I'm just saying she's dating my ex there's nothing wrong with that..

Dlozi: Don't start trouble you know mama k..

Tamara: Fine ngizomuyeka (I'll leave her)

The was a moment of silence for a while...

Tamara: So does he still know how to fuck?

Dlozi: kodwa lesfebe (this bitch)

Tamara: Its no secret that Cowen can fuck you till your womb hurts..

Me: uhm i don't think it's appropriate for me to be discussing my sex life with you..

Her: Hai bo awume sisi (wait a minute) fucking means nothing so chill..

I really didn't like where this was going..

Tamara: would you believe me if i say we fucked last week?

Dlozi: Nazo ke (here we go)

Tamara: Its true i can even describe the corners of his penthouse that this girl here doesn't even know about... does he still have that skull duvet?

I stood up..

Me: Can i be excused?

Dlozi: kahle Funi..

I started walking away.. I really wasn't down for this at all..

I literally walked out the yard and Walked around in a hood that i didn't even know. I wanted to be alone and get some air, because i was very upset..

PART 52 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:23] Ron: PART 53 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I walked around in that hood, a part of me was a bit scared because those boys who chill at the corner would whistle at me, some would come to me but back off as soon as i say I'm with sbusiso.. It's so humbling to see how Cowen is feared and respected in that hood despite the fact that he is white. I mean you would expect people to play on his head and all that but he was truly feared..

A Saint found me sitting at the corner crying when i was lost and couldn't find my way home anymore, they decided to walk me home as soon as i told them where im from....

At the house almost everyone was worried sick about me, they were going up and down looking for me and i regretted what i did i don't want Cowen's family thinking that i am a troublemaker of some sort.....

So there i was, in mama k's room she was busy talking to me about what i did..

Mama k: kodwa Funi, Dlozi told me what Tamara said to you. I never really liked that girl she's a troublemaker...

I didn't say anything i was too ashamed of what i had done that i couldn't look her in the eye..

Her: Your reaction to what Tamara said shows that you love uSbusiso but you shouldn't listen to such things especially from abomandinda esthebeni abafana no Tamara..

I nodded my head..

Her: i don't wanna lie you really scared us, i mean besizothini ku sbusiso if something happened to you(what were we gonna say to sbusiso if something happened to you)..

She was right..

Me: Sorry mama k..

Her: You just don't know how much i was very worried about you, i am glad that you are okay my baby..

I smiled at her, this woman truly does have a warm heart...

As we were sitting there on her bed talking, the door flung open and Cowen walked in. He did not look very happy..

Mama k: Someone brought her home not so long ago...

He gave me a dead stare, my heart started racing..

Cowen: Let me talk to her..

She looked at me, then stood up and Walked over to Cowen..

Her: Go easy on her..

She then walked out and closed the door behind her.. Cowen went to fetch the chair and sat opposite me..

He was looking at me while tapping his one foot, he was holding a can on grapetiser on his right hand..

Him: Tamara and i dated long time ago think since from i was 13 till 16 when i moved away from here, that's when we broke up.. I haven't touched her, seen her, or even communicated with her ever since from that day until today when i saw her...

I wanted to say something but i figured it's best to keep quiet for now..

Him: Do you believe me?

I looked down, and he snapped..

Him: Dammit Funi!

He didn't shout but his voice was firm and intimidating that i got a bit scared..

Him: is this how our relationship is going to be? You believing strangers over me? So every girl who comes to you and tells you something about me you gonna believe them?

He was right..

Him: if that's how things are going to be then our relationship is going to be meaningless, a relationship without trust will never work out..

I was still silent..

Him: ungang'casuli (don't irritate me) decide now if you want us to stay or if we should go home..

He stood up..

Him: I'll be waiting for you at the kitchen, if you wanna go home then take your jacket and bag then we'll go..

He walked out after saying that while banging the door behind him..

I sat there for a while thinking, i have caused enough drama for a day in this family and i don't want them thinking otherwise of me, i think its best i leave now before i embarrass myself more..

I stood up then took my jacket&bag then made my way to the kitchen..

He was standing at the kitchen with mama k and a few of his Aunties..

Thenji: Hau sekuyahanjwa nje kanjalo (you guys are going just like that)..

All eyes were on me waiting for my response..

Me: I'm just tired

Mama k: Yooh uDlozi nalento yakhe bazebasicedela ubumnandi (Dlozi and her thing ruined our fun)

Khabo: speak of the devil

Dlozi and Tamara Walked in. The were inseparable like twins,always together...

Dlozi: uDlozi wenzeni manje? (what did Dlozi do)..

Mama k raised her hand to them as if like she was going to hit them again..

Mama k: Yooh yazi ningihleli entanyeni (you guys are on my neck)

Thenji: kanti Dlozi nitheni ku Funi? (what did you guys say to Funi)

Tamara: Ohh that thing yazi mina bengizidlalela shame kanti uyithathe serious? (i was just kidding didn't know she was gonna take it serious)

Mama k took a broom and chased them out..

Cowen: Mama bayeke uFuni uyatetema nje (mama leave them Funi is just being a cry baby)..

I am still trying to get used to Cowen speaking an African language.. He then looked at me.

Him: Let's go

His Aunties hugged me..

Thenji: sibuhlungu shame that you guys are leaving like this..

Me: Its okay

Khabo: uhambe kahle sisi (go well sister)

Me: Thank you...

We walked out to the gate and bumped into mama k busy yelling at Dlozi and Tamara on the street while still holding the broom..

Mama k: Angisafuni ukubona umqondo wakho wena Tamara la (i never wanna see you here again Tamara)

Cowen: We leaving Ma..

She dropped the broom and came to hug me..

Her: call me when you get home..

Me: i will

we then exchanged numbers..

Mama k: Don't be strangers phela..

Me: We won't..

She hugged Cowen then we got into the car and we drove to the penthouse....

We didn't say anything in the car, he was playing music while concentrating on the road and i was on Facebook all the way..

We finally got to there and went to the Elevator....

Everything was as how we left it, good thing we don't have kids to make the place dirty....

Him: Im going to take a shower..

He walked upstairs..

I put my jacket and bag on the couch then went to make something to eat since we didn't eat at his place, i was dead hungry.....

As i was preparing something my phone rang, probably is Mama k i even forgot to call her.. I went and took my phone then looked at the caller ID it was Zuko my heart started racing. Although i don't have his numbers saved anymore but i still recognise it..

What the hell does he want?

PART 53 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:24] Ron: PART 54 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I didn't answer his calls, he must've called round about 5 times, all i did was to just stare at the phone. I really don't know what

Zuko wants i thought he was happy with Olona i mean they even engaged...

I couldn't even eat anymore, his phone calls ruined my appetite completely.....

Cowen came down as i was standing next to the kitchen counter busy starring at my phone..

Him: Did you eat?

I looked at him, he was shirtless and only wearing his long black track pants and had a black necklace around his neck that had a little silver pendant skull..

He also had a few skull tattoos, on his body. A big one on his back and one on his right breast then one on his wrist, and neck..

Me: I'm not hungry anymore

He got himself a grape juice from the fridge..

Him: Why, what happened?

I signed..

Me: i got multiple calls from Zuko

Him: What did he say?

Me: i didn't answer

Him: Pass me your phone..

I passed him my phone and he went through it..

Him: Funny enough i got a call from this very same number...

I stood up straight and looked at him..

He drank the juice.

Him: it was Olona she was looking for you..

Me: Why would Olona call me with Zuko's phone?

He shrugged his shoulders..

Me: And why would she call you?

Him: i don't even know where she got my numbers from..

My phone rang again it was the same number, i looked at Cowen..

Him: Answer

I answered and put it on loud speaker..

Me: H.. Hel.. Hello

She sniffed..

Olona: Funi it's Olona

Me: Hey Olo..

Her: Hi.. Sorry I'm calling you with my fiancé's phone because i lost my phone yesterday..

Me: Ohw it's okay

Her: Did Cowen tell you that i was looking for you, i called him.. I got his number from my doctor

Me: Its okay..

Her: Remember you were working for me so i don't know were we stand with that?

I totally forgot about that...

Me: i am very sorry about that Olona, i had alot going on my father dying and etc.. I should've told you but everything just slipped my mind..

Her: Its fine i understand, anyway do you still want the job or should i get someone else?

I looked at Cowen and he nodded..

Me: i still want the job if it's still available...

Her: i was hoping you could say that, can you please come tomorrow at 8:00 am i am alone and i could use some help there's alot to do i will pay you extra, for extra time that you put in..

Me: Ofcause I'll be there

Her: See you then.. Bye

Me: Bye

I hung up and looked at Cowen..

Him: You don't want the job anymore?

Me: i don't know Cowen especially with Zuko around..

Him: You can't live your life being scared of him, you need to go to the mall if you want too without you feeling afraid, you need to live your life free of Zuko.. Plus i was thinking that you can use this as a good experience and go to a fashion design school next year while you know alot about the field..

Me: You have a point there..

Him: You were gonna go this year, but i think registrations are closed now...

Me: i like how you think..

Him: You should..

He came closer and kissed me..

Me: But how are we gonna keep Zuko away from me?

Him: Leave that to me

Me: Right on Braga..

He gave me that weird look again..

Him: Call me that one more time,and i swear i won't be responsible for my actions..

Me: Are you threatening me Mr Braga?

He gave me a side smile..

Him: Don't try me woman

I moved away from him..

Me: Braga.. Braga.. Braga..

The next i know he is chasing me all the way up the stairs and to the bedroom.. He then picks me up and throws me on the bed, while I'm laughing like crazy..

Me: Wait let me catch my breath..

He looks at me while I'm still breathing heavily..

Me: What?

He smiles..

Him: Nothing..

He kisses me..

Him: i love you...

He says those words and i look into his eyes knowing that he means them..

Me: i love you too

He runs his finger on my lips..

Him: There is no time of the day where I don't find myself thinking about you and not smiling alone...

Me: Ncoooh that is soo sweet..

He kisses me again and this time things escalate, he is running his hand under my dress..

Me: We need to talk..

He opens my legs wide with his strong hands and gets in between them with my dress high up my waist..

Me: Cowen wait..

Him: Come now bubu i don't wanna force myself on you,cause that would be rape and I'm not about that..

He is biting my neck and his stiff manhood is against my Vagina, although i still have my underwear on i could feel it rubbing my clit as he is busy moving..

Me: But we need too.. We... I..

He pins my hands against the bed again, what i have noticed is that Cowen likes to dominate, he likes to feel in control in that department... I soo wanna tell him that i might be pregnant, but i can't it's more like he has casted a spell on me, i am under his sexual spell...

I feel myself wanting him, and i feel myself wanting him now..

Me: Ohhhh Cowen..

PART 54 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:26] Ron: PART 55 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

It was a Sunday morning and I had just finished preparing myself for work.. I was wearing a black jumpsuit with a gold belt around my waist and black heels.. My hair had grown but i still kept it as an afro.. I put on my gold stud earrings and make up...

I then took my clutch bag and went downstairs.....

When I was at the top of the stairs, about to climb down i heard Cowen talking to someone I stood there and listened..

Cowen: Shabba you are to keep her safe..

Shabba: Ofcause Braga..

Cowen: if he touches her, even if it's a strand of her hair i will kill you..Funi means everything to

me and i was talking to my mom on the phone, she told me that Funi might be carrying my baby.. So that's my family, my heart and if something happens to them Shabba....

Aii trust mama k to keep a secret..

Although i was at a far distance i could see Shabba was intimidated by Cowen's statement i mean i would be too Cowen can be scary sometimes...

Cowen: I'll constantly call her, if she doesn't answer I'm there..

Shabba: Braga why don't you do it then man cause now you intimidating me as fuck..

Cowen: if i do it, then what's the use of having you as a skull? Plus i need to study a bit, tomorrow I'm going to do my very first open heart surgery need to Ace that clinical assessment..

Shabba: Okay..

I decided to go down the stairs while clearing my throat, so Cowen could stop scaring poor Shabba...

Cowen: and there she is..

I walked up to them, he put his hand around my waist and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: This is Shabba, and Shabba this is my heart Funi..

He took off his hat and extended his hand to me for a handshake..

Him: Nice knowing you miss Funi..

Soo much respect, Cowen really got to him.

Me: Same here..

Cowen: Shabba will drive you to work and keep an eye on you..

Me: His gonna be inside the shop like a bodyguard?

Cowen: Yes..

I looked at him defeated..

Him: i don't want any mistakes..

I looked at Shabba he was a very cute young man, and looked very charming but his tattoos and all that might scare the customers away...

Me: i don't think most customers will be comfortable with this

Cowen: You can even put him at the back of the storeroom i don't care, i just want him there..

Me: Fine

He kissed me while arching my back..

Him: Have a nice day and call me

Me: Yes Braga i will

He spanked my Ass very hard..

Me: ouch!!

Him: i told you that it's Cowen to you..

I stuck out my tongue at him..

Him: Don't do that you look like a puppy..

Me: puppies are cute

Him: Whatever..

I smiled at him then Shabba and i went to the elevator... I looked at Shabba and he looked young, why is he in this skull things he should be at school..

We went to his black dodge, it's like every member of the skull had a dodge..

Him: Are you comfortable?

Me: i am in the car not in bed..

He chuckled.. I was really trying to make him feel at ease.. He then started driving.. We were quiet for a while, until i decided to break the ice..

Me: Shabba

Him: Yes Miss Funi

Me: Please address me as funi

He cleared his throat..

Him: Yes Funi?

Me: How old are you?

Him: Im 23 mam'

Me: Thought you 19

Him: No I'm actually 23

Me: Okay

I looked at the road, then looked at him again..

Me: Can i ask you something?

Him: Yes mam..

Me: What are the Skulls all about?

Him: Did you have this conversation with Cowen?

Me: No..

Him: Then i can't tell you..

Me: Come on..

Him: i don't wanna risk it if Bra.. I mean if Cowen finds out that I told you his gonna kill me...

Me: i know his name is Braga so relax..

He kept quiet..

Me: Come on Shabba

Him: No

Me: It'll just be our little secret, i swear i won't tell..

Him: No..

I kept on begging him until he gave up..

Him: Please don't tell Braga that i had this conversation with you..

Me: i cross my heart and hope to die..

Him: The Skulls is a gang that is composed of men and woman.. It's the most biggest and dangerous after The Bloods and The crips..

Me: interesting.. Why do you guys wear Black and white only?

Him: Just like other gangs our colours symbolise something...

Me: What Is that?

Him: Black symbolises death, we kill without mercy..

Me: And white?

Him: symbolises purity

Me: purity from what?

After Killing someone we cover their bloody body with a white cloth to purify ourselves from their death and to be without sin

Me: Yooh.. So you guys use Axes?

Him: Not only Axes, but guns and knives too.. The Skulls aims to protect each member...

Me: Other than killing what else do you guys do?

Him: depends

Me: Do you guys do other crimes that earn you money?

Him: The Skull has successful people. We have lawyers, doctors, nurses, detectives, superintendents..

Me: Wow you have Cops too?

Him: We have everything

Me: What are you?

Him: i don't have a profession, so me and the other members who were never afforded that opportunity to go to school we bomb ATMs.... But every member benefits from that there's a certain salary you get from being a Skull..

Me: So who is the leader?

Him: Every province has a leader, us here In Gauteng Braga is our leader

Me: He runs the gang?

Him: Yes..

Me: Yooh interesting staff.. So has Cowen killed someone before?

He laughed..

Him: Wena what do you think?

Me: i am not a skull i don't know what to think..

Him: Then let's leave it like that..

We finally got to the boutique and i spotted Zuko's car parked outside, i started getting a bit scared..

Shabba: Are you alright?

I looked at him..

Me: Yes i am..

We went inside the boutique and Olona was at the front alone..

She smiled when she saw me..

Her: Hey, thank you for coming

I went up to her and tried hugging her but she stopped Me..

Her: Sorry my body is Aching

Me: What happened?

Her: long story..

She looked at Shabba..

Me: Ohw this is my bodyguard Shabba, and Shabba meet my boss Olona..

They greeted each other..

Me: i hope you don't mind if he sticks around..

Olona: Uhm i don't think so, he can go sit by the couch..

Shabba: Thank you

Shabba went to sit at the couch..

Olona: What you need a bodyguard for? (Whispering)

Me: long story (Whispering)

Her: His cute (Whispering)

Me: Very (Whispering)

I looked around and saw alot of boxes lying around...

Me: Looks like we have alot to do

Olona: You right about that..

Me: I see your fiancé's car parked outside, is he here?

Her: Well he..

Zuko came in as we were just talking about him..

Olona: Speak of the devil..

He was holding a package from the pharmacy.. I tried to prevent myself from being scared of him, i tried remembering everything that Cowen had said to me..

As he came closer to us, Shabba stood up..

Zuko: got your things

Olona: Thank you

She didn't even look at him in the eye, i could feel the vibe between them..

Olona: I'll put it at the back

She started limping her way to the back.. Zuko looked at me while we were standing there.

Him: Hi

Me: Hello

Him: long time

Me: long time indeed

Him: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you

Him: You and your boyfriend owe us the double date dinner

Me: I'll talk to him

He looked at me from head to toe..

Him: i have never seen you this joyful he must be treating you right i can even see the curves are getting more wider..

Me: as a matter of fact he is treating me right...

Him: That's good

Me: ya

Then there was some awkward silence between us..

Me: Sorry i have to hang this, excuse me...

As i was walking pass him he held my hand..

Him: Funi i...

I looked at his hand and he let go, Shabba came to us..

Shabba: Excuse me but do we have a problem here?

Zuko looked at Shabba..

Zuko: I'll just go to check on my fiancé....

He then started walking to the back..

Shabba: Are you alright miss Funi mam?

Me: I'm alright Shabba thank you

Something didn't add up with Zuko, he looked a bit stressed, and empty like something is missing in his life ..

PART 55 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:27] Ron: PART 56 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

3 weeks later

My life was very peaceful, for the first time ever i found myself enjoying life....

Although everything seemed to be going well, but i still had that void and pain of missing and needing my father every now and then, i guess that will never go away no matter how much i try to avoid thinking about it...

I was still working for Olona and she was having her ups and downs with Zuko she just didn't like opening up about what's happening at home but i could see right through her that she wasn't happy at all, she was breaking each day... Zuko would still come to the Boutique every now and then, the only words we would exchange were "hello" that was just round about it then he will go on about his own business. He just seemed not to be his normal self anymore. I didn't really care, but i did wanna know what's happening, i am that nosey....

Since Zuko wasn't bothering me anymore, Cowen relieved Shabba from being my bodyguard because he also had responsibilities of his own especially with the Skulls, but Cowen would call me everyday at work to make sure that i am alright....

Olona was no longer full hands on at the boutique, sometimes she won't show up for work at all and not even give an explanation so i found myself running the boutique in my amateur state but at least she hired a temp to help me....

It was a Friday morning i didn't go to work after working hard the past 4 days, Olona gave me

this day off by closing the boutique only for today, and i won't lie i was really worried about her..

I was sitting on my bed staring at the 2nd pregnancy test hoping that it would have different results because the 1st one came back positive, so on this one i was hoping for a "negative" at least but unfortunately the results came back the same i was indeed pregnant.. I know that Cowen and i we haven't been using protection and i shouldn't be surprised at what i was seeing but hey i really didn't expect the results to turn out this way...

I exhaled then took the pregnancy test and went downstairs to Cowen...

Since it was my day off, he also decided to take a day off too, so we could spend some quality time together....

I passed him by the couch in the lounge and went to the kitchen, he looked like he was watching some medical show....

I put the pregnancy test on the counter and went to boil some water to make myself some coffee. I then took a mug from the cupboard and banged it on the counter soo hard that it almost broke..

I was banging everything that i touched, and i was bumping into everything that I came close too...

i was really upset about something that i also didn't know..

I saw Cowen making his way to me after he had throughly observed my behaviour...

He didn't say anything he just looked at me as i was busy going crazy.....

He then took the pregnancy test and looked at it.

Him: How many of this are you gonna do for you to believe that you actually pregnant?

I kept quiet and continued with what i was doing..

Him: Bubu..

I looked at him and snapped..

Me: What Cowen? What do you want??! (yelling)

Him: i just....

He sighed...

Him: Never mind..

He stood up started walking away..

Me: i am scared Cowen

He stopped then turned around and looked at me..

Him: Then why don't you just talk to me about it instead of giving me attitude and a lip with your chubby cheeks.....

I gave him a serious look..

Him: Im sorry you don't have chubby cheeks, that came out wrong..

He came and sat down opposite me..

Him: part of this is my fault, as a man i should've used protection and we should've talked about this because now you finding yourself in a situation that you wasn't ready and prepared for....

He was right, i wasn't ready for this..

Cowen has a way of making everything fine with words, he truly has a way with words and also means every word that he says..

He stood up and came to me then just wrapped his arms around me without saying anything..

Me: I'm not ready Cowen..

Him: i understand and I'm sorry..

I didn't even think of abortion because it is the last thing on my mind, i don't believe in abortion at all...

He lifted my chin up so i could look at him, with eyes still full of tears..

Him: i could already see my baby girl having those big beautiful sparkling eyes..

He ran his hand on my lips..

Him: Those beautiful thick lips..

He then squeezed my cheek..

Him: And those chubby cheeks

He then went on to put his hand under my left breast..

Him: but i mostly imagine her having your gentle yet persevering heart.. Your heart has endured soo much pain but you still standing..

I sent out a slight laugh through those tears.. He pecked my lips.

Him: i love you never forget that and we'll go through this together,i will never let you go through this alone..

Me: Do you mean that?

Him: i promise you that..

I smiled..

Him: go bath I'll take you out for breakfast..

Me: Okay

I started walking away and as he was about to spank my butt, i quickly turned around and looked at him..

Me: Don't..

He curved his lower lip..

Him: Sorry..

Me: Do you even know that I get red marks each time when you spank my butt?

Him: Now you over exaggerating..

Me: I'm for real

Him: Yea whatever go bath

I started walking but stopped again..

Me: uhm don't forget we have to go to Zuko and Olona's place tonight for dinner, they have been trying to do this double date thing and we have been turning them down..I think we should just go, you know get it over and done with..

Him: Your ex is obsessed

Me: Why you say that?

He folded his arms and looked at me..

Him: after this dinner tonight, they will invite us again for another dinner date, then another one, and another one.. He still wanna keep track of your life and what's happening in it forever....

Me: You think so?

Cowen: I'm telling you, but worry not about that..go and bath.

I walked upstairs while thinking about Everything that Cowen has said,but Zuko hasn't called me or bothered me so he might have really laid back....

I got upstairs and ran me a warm bath,i hopped inside and just relaxed trying to decrease my

stress levels....

I have alot going on lately my life is very busy especially where work is involved.....

I got out of the bathtub after 30minutes and made my way to the bedroom where my phone was busy ringing....

I went to get it on the bed and it was Zuko, i don't know if it's him calling me or if it's Olona because lately they been sharing the same phone so i just answered..

Me: Hello

Zuko: Funi it's me please don't hang up..

Me: Zuko?

Him: Yes just don't hang up please

Me: What is it now?

He sounded soo down..

Him: It's Olona..

Me: What about Olona?

Zuko: She's in hospital, she hurt herself and she wants to see you please come..

Me: What happened?

Him: i cannot explain on the phone please come..

Me: Okay calm down i am on my way

I hung up and ran downstairs to Cowen with my towel still on..

Me: Baby!!

He looked at me and saw that i was a bit shaken..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: We need to go to the hospital..

Him: What? Are you okay? Is the baby okay?

Me: I'm fine. Its Olona she's in hospital, she tried hurting herself We have to go!..

He looked at me and didn't say anything...

Me: Cowen!!

He started laughing..

Him: This guy is good

Me: What? Cowen this is not funny!!

He held my hand as i was about to walk away all pissed..

Him: Calm your titties down Boo bear.

Me: Cowen this is not a joke!! How can you be soo insensitive?

Him: it is, come and see this..

He got his laptop, opened it and worked it out then turned it to me..

Me: This better be good..

I looked at his laptop, and what i saw made my jaw drop.. Zuko is a sick bastard and he will never change..

PART 56 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:28] Ron: PART 57 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

What Cowen showed me was a video where Zuko was holding Olona captive. It looked like they were in an old warehouse. Olona was tied to a chair, with something around her neck. She was crying painfully and begging for her life.. Zuko was busy walking around with a gun and had other 3 guys there with him..

Olona: Zuko please..

Zuko turned and looked at her...

Zuko: that bitch better show up or you dead!! See that bomb necklace around your neck, it's counting down. If i were you i would start praying..

Olona: Zuko please... I can't leave my daughter i am all she has...

Zuko got closer to her and started shouting at her..

Zuko: You think i give a fuck about that little brat?? She is not my seed i don't give a fuck!!
(shouting)

Olona: Please.. I'll.. I'll.. Do anything just don't kill me..

Zuko: Can you get Funi here??

She didn't say nothing she continued crying..

Zuko: Exactly!!

He got away from Olona and looked at his guys..

Zuko: Where my phone at?

One of them gave him his phone and he dialled some number then put it next to his ear while busy walking around... After a few minutes he threw it against the wall.

Zuko: She's not answering!! She's fucken not answering!!! (shouting)

I have seen Zuko angry, but i have never seen him this angry....

Olona was still crying i could see that she was very scared...

Zuko: Khawuthule maan (shut up)

He continued walking up and down again...

I saw one of the guys approaching the door.... All attention went to the door, then I saw Bongji walking in i don't wanna lie i was shocked to see that she was also in on this..

Bongji: She's not here?

Zuko: i have been trying to call her she's not answering..

Bongji looked at Olona..

Bongji: Why is she crying like this as if like someone had died?

Zuko: You don't know how much she's irritating me.....

Cowen closed the laptop, i was broken, i was shocked, i had mixed emotions alot was happening.. I put my hand over my mouth and put my other hand on Cowen's arm..

Me: ohh my God Cowen..

I felt a panic attack creeping in..

Me: What's happening?

Him: Calm down bubu..

Me: Why they doing this? Why they wanna ruin my life so bad? Why they after me? What did i do to them??...

He held my hand and Walked me to the couch were he sat me down...

Him: I'll get you something to drink..

He went and got me a glass of water..

Him: i put a bit of sugar..

I drank the water..

Him: Calm down..

Me: i can't calm down, i am scared Cowen...

He put his hands on my cheeks..

Him: Look at me

I looked at him..

Him: You trust me right?

Me: Yes..

Him: Then trust me when i say no one is gonna touch you okay?

Me: Okay..

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: go and get dressed then we'll go out..

My eyes popped out, is Cowen for real? I am in danger, Olona is about to explode and he wants us to go out..

Me: Cowen..

Him: You said you trust me..

I looked at him, yes i trust him. He has never let me down..

I stood up and went upstairs to get dressed....

When i got upstairs i checked my phone and i had a missed call from Zuko, i think it was when he called me and i didn't pick up..

You have no idea how i was feeling, i was truly broken, my heart ached for Olona she doesn't deserve all of this...

I was still sitting on the bed crying. I felt like i had no feelings anymore, i was numb.. Everything that Zuko did to me came back crashing and crowding my mind i felt like i was going crazy... I put my hands on my head..

Me: Get out of my head!!!.. Get out of my head!!!!...

I was feeling some type of way..

Me: Get out of my head!!!! (shouting)

I felt someone touching me i jumped..

Cowen: Its me...

I looked at him..

Me: Tell them to leave me alone Cowen!!.. Tell Zuko and his family to leave me alone!!

I was now crying.. He hugged me.

Him: You alright..i would die before i let those people touch you.

His phone rang and he answered..

Him: Mama... Okay I'm coming.... Ya she's here.. Okay...

He hunged up..

Him: Im coming, mama k is here..

He looked at me as if like he didn't wanna Leave me alone.. But then, he eventually left me alone...

I wish Zuko Could know how much he was breaking me, how much he was hurting me.. I wish he could just leave me alone..

Cowen came in with mama k..

Mama: Ohh umntwana wami kodwa..

She looked worried about me..

I cried again when i saw her.. I stood up and went to hug her...

Her: uzoba right nono, askies.. (you'll be alright)

It felt good being in her arms, i felt the warmth of her heart as my head laid on her chest..

Cowen: Are you guys going to be okay?

Mama k: Yes..

I looked at him

Me: Where you going?

Him: Im going to get your friend..

His phone rang again..

Him: it's Shabba i have to take this..

He walked away.....

I was very afraid of what was gonna happen when Cowen gets there..

PART 57 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:29] Ron: PART 58 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I had been sleeping for a while now, i really needed to forget about what was happening just for a little bit.. I won't lie, i was very scared for Cowen i mean Zuko is crazy, Zuko is very very crazy and what if he kills Cowen what is gonna become of me??

I got out of bed and went to the bathroom to freshen up, my eyes were a bit swollen....

I looked myself in the mirror with tears streaming down. Tears seemed to always be close this days..

I exhaled a little. I was emotionally drained, i was tired of everything that was happening.. I was once just this sweet girl working at Fish n chips, how did my life get to be soo complicated??? How did i get to attract such men?? Couldn't Cowen just be a normal bloody doctor with no strings attached? Couldn't Zuko be normal and not have bipolar?? I had alot of questions but less answers.....

When i was done freshening up, i made my way downstairs....I spotted Shabba sitting at the kitchen counter and looking at Cowen's laptop busy laughing...

I stood there and looked at him for a while...Cowen has soo much faith in Shabba that he can protect us, but when i look at him i see this cute young man who should be doing a certain course at Varsity and enjoying Varsity life with his peers rather than being in a criminal/Gangster gang...

I walked up to him, he didn't notice me at first he had his headsets on busy laughing and talking alone..

Shabba: Get him nigga, he doesn't know us we Gangster.....

When i got to him he quickly closed the laptop but it was late i had already seen a glimpse of what was happening... He took off his headsets..

Him: Miss Funi i didn't...

Me: What are you watching?

Him: It's nothing just...

Me: Show me what you watching..

Him: i...

Me: Now Shabba!!! (Yelling)

He opened the laptop, and played what was happening at the warehouse...

Me: move boy....

He got out of the chair and i sat.. Cowen and his crew were already at the warehouse, Bongi and Zuko were held at gunpoint and i saw one of the female members making her way to Olona and touching the bomb necklace..

Olona: Please don't touch it, it will explode...

Her: Trust me i am trained to do this..

They all kept quiet and observed what she was doing.... I was also scared what if she messes up and they all die...I closed my eyes

Me: Shabba please tell me when they done..

Him: relax she's a pro at this..

After a few minutes i heard people cheering, even Shabba made a bit of noise.....

Shabba: Yes!!!!.

I opened my eyes and looked at the screen, the necklace was safely removed from Olona's neck.. I was very relieved.

Cowen: all yall motherf*****! Were scared i wasn't, i know faith is the best! She was trained well...

Olona stood up and hugged faith..

Olona: Thank you soo much for saving my life....

Faith: You welcome.. Don't squeeze too tight i still have a bomb in my hand that i shouldn't drop....

They broke the hug..

Cowen: Someone take her to the car, she's not supposed to see what's gonna happen here....

Another girl escorted Olona out, i was at peace to see her alright...

Faith turned and looked at the crew..

Faith: How should we dispose this?

Cowen: I have an idea.. Let's sit her highness on the chair and Crown her.....

They went and sat Bongji on the chair, although she acted strong but i could see she was scared...

They tied her to the chair, and then faith put on the necklace on her..

Zuko: Noooo!!!

He was trying to get to his mother but they had a tight grip on him.

The skull crew laughed..

Cowen: Look at the son trying to be superman...

Guy 1: like he gonna fly In this shit....

Cowen: Tripping son of a sea biscuit..

They continued laughing, i really didn't like what was going anymore Cowen and his crew were being unnecessary now..

Shabba: son of a sea biscuit, that's a good one (laughing)

I turned and gave him a serious look, he stopped laughing..

Him: Sorry..

I turned back and looked at the screen....

Faith: should i set it off Braga?

Cowen: Not now..

Zuko: You Braga? I knew that your face looked familiar... Does Funi know about the skeletons in your closet?

Cowen: Eyy don't bring my woman in this!!

Was my first time seeing Cowen raising his voice..

Guy3: What's the next step?

Cowen: i wanna have fun...

Faith: nigga you wanna rap?

Cowen: i wanna rap?

Faith: music please!!!

I then Heard those rap songs playing at the background...

Faith: You the man of the year

Cowen: i am the man of the year..

He turned and stared at the camera...

Cowen: Yow Shabba, hope my mother and my girl ain't seeing what I'm about to do..

He then turned back to his crew..

Shabba: Fu..

Me: Shut up Shabba!!! (shouting)

I really wanted to see what was gonna happen..

Cowen took off his jacket and one of the crew members held it for him..

Cowen: it's been a while since I last did this..

They let Zuko go, i knew what was gonna happen next they gonna fight..

Zuko looked at his mother, then looked at Cowen..

He then ran to Cowen, but Cowen sightly shifted and Zuko fell.. The crew started laughing.

Cowen: i ain't even touch him yet.. What's wrong MQ? 'bout to have your period soon???

Crew: Ohhhhhhwww

Zuko got up and attempted again, but this time around Cowen didn't shift he punched Zuko so hard that he fell.. I have never seen nobody punch like that..

Cowen just continued rapping along to the songs while waiting for Zuko to recover from the punch...

Cowen: "i ain't a killer but don't push me"..

Zuko stood up, he was a bit dysfunctional and bleeding he couldn't even see the direction he was going in.. Bongi was sitting there crying..

Cowen went to Zuko and started punching him repeatedly..

Cowen: "i am Braga motherf**,if you ain't on my team then you should've ran away from me"...

Faith: beating women up has turned him into a pussy, he needs that sex change...

They laughed..

Cowen had no mercy he punched Zuko that Zuko couldn't move anymore and Bongi was crying, pleading with Cowen that he must stop....

I never knew that Cowen could be this heartless,i saw a complete different side of him..

Cowen: gun!

Faith gave him the gun..

Cowen: This is for my babe

He started bashing Zuko's head with the back of the gun.. This was starting be too much for me..

Me: Cowen stop!!!!

Shabba put his hands on my shoulders..

Shabba: Funi..

Me: Leave me alone Shabba!!!

Cowen's white tshirt and hands were bloody..

He then stepped away from Zuko, i saw one of the other guys coming with a chain and putting it around Zuko's neck and was dragging him around the floor like a dog....

It was a pool of blood on the floor..

Cowen got himself a can of coke and started drinking.. I was shocked this guy's hands and everything has blood and then he gonna start drinking a cool drink like nothing happened...

Zuko was dragged around the floor like a dog for a while now..

Cowen: Eyy he shouldn't die.. Drag him outside then call an ambulance..

Guy1: Sure boss

The guy dragged Zuko out..

Cowen: Activate the bomb Necklace faith

Faith: Yes sir!

Bongi was begging for her life..

All the crew went out and faith activated the bomb and went out too, leaving Bongi alone and crying there..

After like 20min there was an explosion and the cameras went down...

I closed the laptop and put my hands on my mouth, what i saw today is surely gonna haunt me forever...

PART 58 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:30] Ron: PART 59 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I know Cowen means well but what i saw was just too sensitive and dramatic. It is true what they say "karma never loses an Address" for all the bad you do to other people, it will come back to you 10times more painful..

What Zuko put my father through, then having his Mom die like that was very sad, but to me it was justice for me and my father...

I love Cowen with all my heart, and seeing that side of him really is gonna make me a bit scared of him but he hasn't given me a reason to think that he might be abusive towards me...

Shabba came and brought me water with lemons in it..

Me: Thank you..

Him: Are you alright?

Me: Ya I'm fine Shabba..

I took a sip of that water.

Him: may we not tell Braga about you seeing what you weren't supposed to see?

I exhaled and looked at him..

Me: i won't be able to look him in the eye and act like i didn't see anything when i did, he will see right through me...

Shabba: I'll have to start planning my funeral then..

Me: i won't let him kill you don't worry..

Shabba: We'll see about that...

Me: Anyway do you have a girlfriend?

He looked at me...

Him: What a question

Me: i now take you as my little brother, so as a big sister i wanna know what goes down in your life..

Him: if you must know, I don't have a gf..

Me: Why is that?

Him: Do you think there's any girl who would tolerate my dangerous lifestyle?

Me: i am trying to get used to Cowen being Braga and being a Skull, I'm sure there's a girl out there who can understand and accept you too..

Him: i don't know about that..

Me: So you telling me that you haven't been laid lately?

Him: Now that i cannot talk to you about...

He stood up and went to make himself coffee..

Me: Come on Shabba...

Him: i am not saying anything

The elevator opened and mama k came through from the elevator, looked like she had some groceries with her...

Her: Sorry that i took long, the mall was full..

She put everything ontop of the kitchen counter.. Then looked at me.

Her: except for your swollen eyes, you look better..

I looked at her.

Me: i do feel a bit better thank you Ma..

Her: That's good because I am going to cook my famous beef stew..

Shabba: that sounds yummy. I haven't had a home cooked meal in a while...

Me: You wouldn't vele you a bachelor..

Mama k looked at him..

Mama k: a handsome man like you is single

Shabba: Yeap..

Mama k: Hmmm I'm thinking you can change Dlozi

Me: hell no.....

She looked at me..

Me: Dlozi will stress Shabba

Mama k: ngathi sowuyaphapha (you being forward now)

Me: Ohw sorry

She looked at Shabba..

Mama k: but miss cover page has a point, Dlozi is somehow..

Shabba: i understand you guys trying to hook me up, but i got this..

Me: You got it alright..

Mama k: Baby did you eat anything today?

I shook my head no..

Her: I'll make you something to eat, maybe some sandwich while i cook..

Me: I'll wait for you to cook Ma..

Her: it wasn't a request, I'll make you the sandwich..

Shabba: count me in too please..

Me: Shabba..

Him: Don't start Funi please..

The elevator opened again, Cowen, faith, and Olona walked in..

Faith: i was the one who put more effort in everything..

Cowen: Whatever niggarian girl..

Olona looked at me, i looked at her too..

Her: Funi..

I stood up and met her halfway then we Hugged each other..

Me: I'm sorry, i should've told you about Zuko from the very beginning..

She was tearing up, and so was i..

We broke the hug and she put her hands on my cheeks..

Her: Its not your fault sweetie..

I looked at her..

Her: i thought i was gonna die, if it wasn't for Cowen i... What was gonna happen with my

daughter..

I shook my head..

Me: Don't think like that, it's over

She turned and looked at Cowen..

Her: Thank you soo much, i don't know how you guys work or if it's appropriate for me to say this but may God bless you..

Cowen just smiled at her..

I was expecting Cowen to be wearing a bloody tshirt, but he looked clean think he changed....

Olona: Uhm i think i should get back to my daughter..

Mama k: Nonsense, stay for dinner..

Olona: i would really love too Ma but, after today i really wanna be with my daughter..

Faith: I'll give you a lift..

Olona: Thank you..

Me: Don't worry about the boutique me and Thalue we'll keep everything running till you ready to come back..

Her: Thank you soo much Funi..

Me: You welcome..

She hugged me then went with Faith....

Cowen came close to me..

Him: Bubu

I slapped him right across the face..

Him: Wtf?

I looked at him without saying anything..

Him: Leme guess, you saw what happened?

I still didn't say anything..

Cowen: Shabba!!!

Shabba: in my defence i tried to stop her...

He tried going to Shabba but i blocked his way..

Him: Funi i..

He looked ashamed, didn't know what to say..

Him: i....

I walked up to him and just kissed him...

Mama k: respect!!

I separated from him..

Me: i love you..

He smiled at me..

Him: i love you too, but...

Me: But?

Him: Im still gonna kill Shabba

He moved me out of the way and went to him, Shabba ran the other side then came and stood behind me making me his human shield..

Me: Really Shabba?

Shabba: You got us into this mess...

Cowen: Funi move..

Me: Well i think you.. You need to go through me first..

Mama k came and stood next to me..

Mama k: and me..

Shabba: ha!!!! What you gonna do now Braga?

Cowen: Tag team i see..

He went and got one of the cushions on the couch and started hitting us..

Me: That's how you wanna play it?

We all went to get cushions and started hitting each other while laughing, running around, and falling was just a fun moment..

PART 59 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:32] Ron: PART 60 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

Dinner was very delicious mama k really knows her way around the kitchen, she is a great cook..

After dinner, she went straight to bed while i went to bath leaving Cowen and Shabba to tidy up and wash dishes too...

When i was done bathing, i went downstairs to check up on them and they were still washing dishes while rapping.....

Cowen: "Me and my niggas tryna get it, ya bish"

Shabba: "ya bish"

Cowen: "Hit the house lick tell me is you with it, ya bish"

Shabba: "ya bish"

Cowen: "Home invasion was persuasive"

Shabba: "was persuasive"

Cowen: "From nine to five I know it's vacant, ya bish"

Shabba: "ya bish"

I decided to surprise them and join in...

Me: "back to reality we poor, ya bish"

They both turned and looked at me, i hope i got the lyrics right because i have heard the song only once or twice..

Shabba: "and you done bathing, ya bish"

Cowen hit him at the back of his head..

Cowen: watch it..

Shabba: i thought we were still in the spirit of rapping..

I went and sat down on the high chair..

Me: You seriously need to get laid Shabba..

Shabba: My my and how did i know you were gonna say that?

Cowen gave him a serious look..

Me: Leave me alone Shabba..

Cowen dried his hands..

Him: want something to eat Koochi koo?

Shabba giggled..

Me: Where do you get all this retarded names from?

He went to the fridge and got cranberry juice...

Him: Koochi koo sounds better than chubby cheeks..

Shabba giggled again..

Shabba: But-her-cheeks..

Cowen: Eyy uzoswaba joh (you'll be sorry)

Me: What does but her cheeks mean?

Shabba: it means that you beautiful but your cheeks can't say much....

I put my hands on my cheeks..

Me: What about my cheeks?

Shabba: That's all I'm saying for now "but-her-cheeks"..

Cowen went and put his hand at the back of shabba's neck and put him face down on the kitchen counter..

Shabba: Ouch!..

Me: now i see why his single..

Cowen: I ain't hear you saying anything Shabba can i get a vow?

Shabba: Fine I'm sorry...

Cowen let him go..

I was heartbroken at what Shabba said..

Me: You saying I'm ugly Shabba?

Shabba: No i was just joking..

I looked at Cowen...

Cowen: Shabba is just being a jerk baby don't mind him..

Shabba looked at me and winked at me..

Shabba: i was just kidding umuhle saan (you beautiful)

Me: You just saying that because I'm sad now..

Shabba: I'm for real, umuhle.. "Baby Washington, ngathi uKeri Washington..besek'qali nkinga, besekhali'stina"

Cowen: Eish ung'khumbuzaphi skeem (you taking me back)

Both: "she want my ding-ling ufun'ukuyibamba and it made her swing and sing ooh nana nana

the way you shine ntombozan young diva

bathi ngi blind ngoba ngi bona wena kphela"

I looked at them as they were singing and dancing nje just being too forward...

Then after they started making noise..

Shabba: Eish Konje yileskhathi usaphethe u.. (It's that time you still had...)

Cowen Shook his head signalling that he must stop..

Shabba looked at me..

Shabba: Eish..

Me: Qhubeka yilesaskhathi asaphethe ubani? (carry on, it's that time when he still had who)

Shabba: i think i should go...

Cowen: Ya i think that's a good idea..

They started doing those Gangster handshakes..

Shabba: I'll see you tomorrow..

Cowen: plus i want you to drive Funi to work tomorrow..

Shabba: Ayt cool man

He looked at me..

Shabba: I'll see you tomorrow miss but her cheeks..

I took that bottle of cranberry juice and threw it at him...

Him: i swear there's too much violence in this house...

He took his car keys and started walking to the elevator...

Shabba: lay her tonight, she needs that D-tox..

Cowen laughed, i looked at him..

Me: It is not funny at all..

He bit his lower lip while smiling..

Me: Don't get any ideas

He came to me and put his hands on my shoulders while kissing me on my cheek..

Him: i can feel some tension and stress, you really need that D-tox

I turned and looked at him..

Him: What do you say?

He tried kissing me but i turned my face and the kiss landed on my cheek...

Him: What did i do now?

I looked down..

Me: Nothing

He put his hands on my thighs while kissing me on my forehead..

Him: i don't like it when you keep secrets..

Me: Fine, what did Zuko mean when he said "do i know about the skeletons in your closet"

Him: MQ.. MQ.. i should've killed him, because even when his in ICU his still the biggest factor in our relationship...

I started being cheeky...

Me: Then his right, there is skeletons in your closet?

Him: Don't get cheeky with me..

Me: or what Braga? You gonna beat me up and have me dragged across the floor with a chain around my neck like a dog??

He looked at me...

Him: Wow..

Me: And what did Shabba mean by what he said? Are there bitches in your life that i don't know

about Cowen??

Him: yazini Funi i can see that you tired, think you should go to bed and sleep..

He then went and threw himself on the couch and watched TV..

Me: Cowen!!!

He increased the volume..

I stood up and went to him..

Me: Cowen!!!!

Him: Sorry i can't hear you!!

The TV was really loud..

Me: Turn down the volume I'm talking to you!!

Him: What???

Me: i ain't playing right now..

Him: i can't hear you!!!

Me: You such an Ass!!!

Him: huh? What's happening Saturday???

I stood there and looked at him...

He then laughed...

Him: What's happening Saturday?

I felt the corners of my mouth curving, i soo wanted not to laugh but he was making it hard for me not too..

He lowered the volume..

Me: Good night..

I started walking away, he was laughing very loud..

Him: here i was thinking you were gonna assassinate me, from how you got off that chair..

I gave him the middle finger..

Him: Come back and assassinate me... Assassinate me bitch!!!

He continued laughing, and i found myself laughing too as i was walking up the stairs...

PART 60 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:45] Ron: PART 61 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I woke up very late the following day. I had to quickly prepare myself and go to the boutique..

The boutique opens at 09:00 exactly, and at that time i was rushing down the stairs.....

Shabba was sitting at the kitchen eating breakfast, with mama k buttering more bread for him.....

Shabba: yabo mama k, ngcwele ngawe (mama k i like you)...

Mama k: Aisuka ugwele ngokudla kwami not mina (you only like my food not me)..

I put the files on the table with sketches..

Me: oh my word i am very late!

Mama k: haibo where are your manners?

Me: Sorry Ma, how are you?

Her: I'm good and you?

Me: i am fine thanks..

I looked at Shabba..

Me: Let's go

Mama k: Not soo fast sisi, i made scrambled eggs, fried wors, and bacon so sit down and brace yourself..

Shabba was enjoying himself..

Shabba: tastes really good.

Me: Sorry Ma, but i will get something on my way to the boutique..

Her: Okay, when you come back home you won't find me here..

Me: Sowuyahamba? (you are leaving)

Her: Yes, i have to go home to my responsibilitie

s..

Me: That's sad, I'm gonna miss you though..

She came and hugged me..

Her: I'll call you

Me: i hope so..

I looked at Shabba..

Me: Let's go..

He took the last piece of wors and then we went..

We arrived at the boutique at exactly 10:00am... Thalue was already waiting for me.

Me: i am so very sorry

She smiled at me..

Her: Its okay

I gave Shabba my bag who was starring at Thalue.. Then i took out the keys and opened..

Me: We have alot of work to do today..

Her: I'm all hands..

I looked at Shabba..

Me: Thank you for driving me

He was still starring at Thalue..

Him: no problem..

Me: You can go

I guess he didn't hear that because he didn't respond.

Me: Shabba!

He looked at me..

Me: You can go..

Him: wha.. Hell no!!

Me: Zuko is in hospital, we are safe..

He put my bag on the counter then went to sit down on the couch..

Him: i am not taking any chances..

He took out his phone and started playing with it..

I looked at Thalue..

Me: You can steam iron the jeans, then unpack the new Tshirts we got.. Don't forget to lay out the Sale sign..

Her: Yes mam..

I then went to the back office and started with the filing..

I had soo much to do, which was a heavy burden on me since Olona is not around to help..

I never knew how demanding running a business is.....

I had to do filling for yesterday's receipts, i had to do Sensitive transactions, i had to call Marc Jacobs for special orders...

Olona does some of the designs, and then she also gets some of her clothes overseas from other well known designers from there.....

As i was busy doing banking, i heard a knock at the door i looked and it was Thalue..

Her: Hey..

Me: hi

Her: Sorry to bother you but..

Me: But?

Her: Its very hard for me to work..

Me: Why is that?

Her: His just sitting there and starring at me, it's very intimidating and uncomfortable...

Me: Who?

Her: him..

Me: ohww Shabba..

Her: Yes..

Me: I'll handle him..

I stood up and went to the front..

Me: Shabba..

He looked at me.

Me: Would you be soo kind as to go buy me breakfast?

Him: Now?

I put my hand on my tummy

Me: Yes please we are very hungry..

He exhaled then stood up..

Me: i want slab chips, fried quarter chicken, atchaar and 2 Portugese rolls..

Him: That's a weird combination

Me: Are you gonna get me?

Him: Yes.. Ofcause..

He looked at Thalue for the last time and then bit his lower lip..

Me: Shabba!!!

Him: Im going

He went...

I looked at Thalue..

Me: Nice dress

Her: Thanks..

Me: You look good in red

Her: Its my Favourite colour..

I smiled and went back to the back office to carry on with my work..

[THALUE]

I was holding down the font. We didn't have customers as yet so i started to steam the jeans..

As i was steaming the clothes i heard the door opening..

Me: I'll be right there..

I didn't even look at the person..

After a while i felt someone hugging me from the back..

I turned around and it was faith, i removed her hands from me..

Me: for the last time faith i am not a lesbian

She looked at me from head to toe..

Her: You look so sexy in that dress..

I looked around to make sure that Funi is still at the back..

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: Can't i visit my lady..

Me: colleague that is what we are colleagues..

Her: Fine have it your way!!

Me: What does the boss say?

Her: His mad that i am still in this clothes....so did you get anything from her?

I shook my head no..

Me: Funi and i we not that close as yet..

Her: You slacking!! I wanna be out of this clothes they making me sick!!!!!! I am a blood not a skull!!!

Do you know how hard it is for me to wear all black???

Thalue: You need to calm down!! Tell the gang I'm trying.. How is Olona?

Her: she'll survive she's a blood!!

Me: i hope so

Faith: We cannot have The Skulls ruling, they overshadowing us now and it's not good.. The Bloods used to rule it has always been like that!.

PART 61 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:46] Ron: PART 62 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

FUNI

I was surprised to see Faith in the boutique when i went to the front..

Me: Faith??

Her: Hey Funi..

Me: How are you?

Her: Good and you?

Me: I'm okay.. What are you doing here?

Her: Ohw Cowen sent me to check up on you..

Me: That's weird because Shabba is here..

Her: He is?

Me: ya i just sent him somewhere..

Him: ohk then in that case, there's no reason for me to be here...

She looked at Thalue, then looked at me....

Her: I'll see you around ladies...

She then went...

Me: That was weird, Cowen didn't tell me about faith.. Anyway can you please E-mail this to Marc Jacobs..

Her: Okay

I started walking to the back office..

Her: Funi..

I stopped and looked at her...

Her: Did you bring the sketches?

Me: Sketches?

Her: Remember the ones we have to send to the factory before 13:00?

It hit me that i left them at the kitchen counter...

Me: ohhhw shit!!

I looked at her..

Me: i forgot them on the kitchen counter at home, I'll call someone to go get them for me..

Her: i can go..

Thalue is a nice sweet girl, but i don't like letting strangers inside my home.....

Me: No darling, I need you here..

I went to the back and got my phone, i then called Cowen... He answered on the 4th ring..

Him: Hello...

Me: Hey honey..

Him: i didn't check the caller ID, how is my chubby cheeks doing?

Me: Don't start..

He laughed...

Him: What's up baby?

Me: Are you busy?

Him: You could say that, I'm just waiting for another patient to come in..

Me: Ohw

Him: What's wrong?

Me: i forgot some sketches at home and i thought you could get them for me, i have to send them to the factory before 13:00...

Him: Im sorry bubu but after seeing this patient I'll have to go to the hospital, I'll be in theater from 12:00-18:00...

Me: That's bad..

Him: Ask Shabba where is he?

Me: He went to get me something to eat..

Him: i don't know then..

Me: Its fine I'll ask him..

Him: Okay bubu..

Me: Uhm Cowen?

Him: Im still here

Me:Did you send Faith to come and check up on me?

Him: i haven't spoken to faith in a while now..

Me: That's strange because she was here.. Said you asked her to come..

Him: i didn't send her there, i don't trust anyone near you other than Shabba..

Me: That's very strange.

Him: I'll call her, and I'll also call Shabba...

Me: Okay..

Him: i have to go..

Me: Bye have a fruitful day..

Him: I'll be doing an operation nothing fruitful about that..

I laughed..

Him: i love you

Me: i love you too

Him: both of you

Me: And we love you too, both of us..

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

I hunged up, and just stared at the wall thinking about how blessed i am to have Cowen until a familiar voice disturbed my thoughts..

Voice: So this is how you roll now huh?

I looked at the door and it was Brown..

Me: Ohw my word, what are you doing here?

I stood up and went to hug him..

Brown and his fiancé went to London when Zuko found out that they the ones who were digging in his past,so for their safety they had to go in hiding until it was safe for them to come back...

Him: Look at you my friend..

Me: No look at you, you look very good..

We went and sat down..

Me: So how did you find me?

Him: girl, my fiancé is a PI you forgot?

Me: Ohw ya it definitely wasn't that hard to find me..

Her: Not at all...

Me: So how was London?

Him: it was good, can't complain..

Me: Did you miss me?

Him: alot wished you were there..

Me: next time

He looked down..

Me: What's wrong?

Him: it's nothing..

Me: Come on Brown..

He took a deep breath..

Him: i went to the hospital today..

Me: And?

Him: i saw Zuko

Me: uhm okay..

Him: His making good progress Funi, he might be out of the coma in no time..

Me: What??

Him: You can't keep the devil down

Me: i guess soo..

Those news i wasn't prepared for at all, if it were up to me Zuko would be in a coma forever...

PART 62 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:47] Ron: PART 63 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I knocked off late at around 18:30. We had alot to do at the boutique which took very long, my feet were killing me, my body was Aching..

It was just crazy. All i wanted to do was to get home, take a long bath and go to bed with my man massaging my feet....

But my plans were cut short when we had to go and meet up with Cowen at some restaurant. We don't do much cooking at home, we mostly live on takeaways...

Me: Thalue thank you very much for today, you were off great help..

She smiled at me...

Her: i am just glad that i could help..

Me: Tomorrow same place and same time. I hope we'll knock off at 17:00..

Her: i hope so too..

Me: See you tomorrow then..

Her: Okay bye..

Shabba: i can drop you off at home

Thalue: No need, someone will pick me up..

Shabba: Boyfriend?

Her: something like that..

Shabba: either you..

Me: Shabba!!

Shabba: Its fine let's go..

Me: Bye Thalue I'll see you tomorrow

Her: Bye Funi and get some rest..

Me: You too..

We then walked to shabba's car, and went to meet up with Cowen...

We got to the restaurant and Cowen was already waiting for us, he already booked a table for us..

I went up to him and hugged him..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: Just tired.

Him: Well let's eat then and go home after, I'll give you a massage of a lifetime..

I smiled.

Me: You have read my mind..

We all sat down and looked at the menus..

Cowen: Shabba what's this i hear about Faith showing up at the boutique and claiming that i sent her to check up on Funi?

Shabba looked at me...

Shabba: She did?

Me: Yes while you were gone..

Cowen: and why where you gone?

Shabba: i went to get But-her-cheeks over there something to eat..

I gave him a serious look..

Me: uzoswaba (you'll be sorry)

Cowen: Let's just eat and go, my baby is tired..

Shabba: What you gonna have but-her..... I mean Funi

Me: I'm gonna have something called none of your business..

Cowen laughed...

Shabba: You gotta stop being angry, it's not good for the baby..

Me: Whatever!

We ordered something to eat, i got a meal that had slab chips because that was my obsession..

Cowen and Shabba got Steaks and salads..

I always enjoy being in the presence of this two men. They make me laugh, they make me angry, they irritate me sometimes but i like being in their presence and the protection that they give me.....

After our meal, we headed straight home this time around i rode with Cowen while Shabba followed us..

We got there and took the elevator straight to the penthouse.. Shabba was cracking jokes as always in the elevator and we were busy laughing.....

Our laugh seized when we got to the penthouse..

Something was off, the Tv was on and some music video was playing..

I wasn't very familiar with it but it was one of those hip hop songs of theirs it went something like:

"Long as my niggas alright, then we alright.. Long as the drinks on ice then we alright"..

It was really loud..

Shabba and Cowen looked at each other, then took out their guns..

I was surprised to see that Cowen takes his gun to work..

I started getting a bit scared, what was happening? Is there someone in the house?

Cowen looked at Shabba, then pointed upstairs...

Shabba nodded and slowly walked upstairs..

Cowen kept me behind him All the time while we made our way around the lounge then he turned off the Tv, and we made our way to the kitchen....

The is nothing more painful, like not being safe in your own house...

I saw a red bandana on the kitchen counter, Cowen took it and read the message that was written there in black..

Cowen: Fuck!!!

Shabba came back from upstairs..

Shabba: Nothing upstairs..

As soon as he got to us, Cowen threw the bandana at him..

Shabba caught it and read..

Shabba: Fuck!!!

Me: Fuck what?? What's happening?

I took the bandana from Shabba and it read:

"Stay in your Lane Braga"

Cowen: Shabba

Shabba: Yeah?

Cowen: Did you guys invade the west side?

Shabba's tongue was tied, he didn't know what to say..

Shabba: i.. We.. Well...

Cowen went up to him, and put his hand on shabba's neck..

Cowen: I'm gonna ask you one last time! Did you invade the west side?

Cowen was strong, Shabba couldn't get Cowen's hand off his neck...

After a while Cowen let go, and Shabba started coughing..

Shabba: the crew hit Barclays last night..

Cowen's eyes popped out..

Cowen: Wtf!!!!!!...

I had no clue what was happening..

Cowen: The last thing i want is Riley and his crew on my back!! Why did the crew Rob Absa?
Absa is not our bank!!..

He started pacing up and down..

Cowen: Who called this whole operation? Because i had nothing to do with it!...

Shabba: Faa.. Faith..

Cowen: Since when does Faith run the Skulls? So you guys listen to faith now huh?

He started walking up to shabba and i stopped him...

Me: Cowen..

He looked at me..

Him: Stay out of this...

Cowen: How much did you guys score?

Shabba: 50million

I turned and looked at Shabba..

Me: 50mill in cash?

Him: You already But-her-cheeks, don't be but-her-brains too..

Me: i should've let him fuck you up..

We started arguing..

Cowen: Eyy i don't have time for your nonsense right now!!!

We kept quiet...

He took out his phone and dialled some number, he put it on loud speaker.. The person answered, was more like he was waiting for the call...

Person: Braga...

Cowen: Sniper..

Sniper: got my message i see..

Cowen cleared his throat..

Cowen: i heard about what my crew did, i wanna make it right..

Sniper: You know what to do..

Cowen: i can't give you the money..

The Sniper laughed..

Sniper: Braga don't start something you won't handle..

Braga: You ain't getting the money..

Sniper: You wanna play this the hard way i see... How is Fanzi, feni.. Funi.. What's her name again?

Cowen's jaw dropped..

Cowen: How do you know about Funi?

Sniper: You should know me by now..

Braga: Stay away from my family..

Sniper: Do the right thing!

He then hunged up.. I looked at Cowen..

Shabba: Why is it that Riley Always has to go for his opponent's family? Why can't he man up and face his enemy straight...

Cowen ignored him, he looked as if like he was in deep thoughts..

Shabba: Braga?

Cowen: Let's just give him the money..

Shabba: ithi uyadlala (tell me you planning)

Cowen: i have alot on my plate, MQ is about to recover soon i need to concentrate on that, i can't have The Bloods on my back..

He started walking away..

Cowen: give him the money!

I looked at Shabba..

Me: Who is The Sniper?

Him: Leader of the Bloods, just like Cowen is the leader of the Skulls..

Me: He sounds dangerous....

Shabba: You have no idea..

When Cowen walked away i could see that he was very down, so i decided to go upstairs and check up on him.....

.

I stood at the doorway, he was sitting on the bed with his shirt unbuttoned and he was busy on his phone that he didn't notice me..

Me: "we got that Gangster love nothing can come between us"

He looked at me and smiled..

I went to sit next to him and laid my head on his shoulder...

Him: Someone is betraying me, i don't do well with betrayal..

Me: How so?

Him: for Riley to know that my crew robbed Barclays last night, someone on the inside must have told him..

Me: Yooh..

Him: i have a rat in my crew..

Me: Who do you suspect?

Cowen: Faith..

Me: Faith?

Cowen: I'm suspecting faith is a blood... Riley put one of his own in my crew..

Me: Why would faith betray you though??

Him: Im not much of a likable person..

Me: So what you gonna do to her?

Him: i don't know yet..

I really didn't expect that from faith..

PART 63 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:48] Ron: PART 64 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[3months later]

Alot has changed in a period of 3months..

Cowen did find out that faith was betraying him. She was in the Skulls but her loyalty was with the Bloods... Not only was faith ruled out a rat, but it was also founded that Olona and Thalue were also part of the Blood gang....

Olona being a blood came as a shock to me. To think that i trusted her, i made her a friend, I kept her close to my heart, i even had her rescued and all along she was taking me for a ride...

I was beyond hurt i won't lie, i thought i found friendship in her kanti all along she was just using me so that her and her crew can bring down the Skulls...

Cowen didn't tell me what he did to them, i asked him several Times and all he said was "it's best if you don't know"...

I knew that he did something to them because i never heard a word from any of them ever since that incident happened...

I had my heart into the boutique, so Cowen decided to buy it for me from the Bloods of which they charged him alot of money that we went broke and we now dependant on his salary only...

I felt like Riley charged him that lump sum of money on purpose just to amuse himself, i really didn't like him...

The Bloods and The Skulls made a truce that they will stay out of each other's way because if they turn all of this into War, it would be a war that we'll end up very bad and innocent people from both parties would have to pay with their lives. So they decided to make a truce because none of them was prepared for that...

My boutique was not making any money, as soon as potential clients heard that Olona is no

longer the owner, they pulled out because they didn't have much faith in me since i was an amateur in this whole field. That made our financial struggles to be worse..

Not only was the boutique not making money, but i was in debt because all the designer clothes from overseas Olona didn't pay for them as yet, and i couldn't take them back so i was very much drowning in debt...

To ease my financial troubles, i hired a young lady who had actually went to Varsity to study Fashion design, but then had to stay at home after graduating because she couldn't get a job..

She was very happy when i offered her the job, i was paying her R5000 a month, off which came from Cowen's salary....

Her name was Dimakatso but we call her Dima and i was very happy to have her around she was a sweet and dedicated young lady...

She didn't even mind being paid peanuts she was just happy to have found a job, at least this will gain her a bit of experience incase she would wanna go and work somewhere else in the near future..

I was now 2months and a couple of weeks pregnant, although Cowen and i we were struggling financially but our lives were very peaceful. We were free from the Bloods, and free from Zuko....

I haven't heard anything from Zuko, because they transfered him to another hospital....

It was a Monday afternoon, was just about to hit 13:00 and i was sitting in my office looking at our financial records...

The only money we made was when people came in to buy, and that money wasn't enough. You would find that we make 25 000 a week, and that money will have to go and cover my debts...

Dima walked into my office as i was sitting there scratching my head trying to make sense of everything..

Her: i think that you need to take a break..

She was holding a paper bag..

She came and put it on my table..

Her: Lunch from your fiancé..

Yeap Cowen finally put a ring to it.. he proposed a few weeks ago, and how he proposed made it very hard for me to say No because he did infront of his whole family when we visited them.....

Unfortunately we couldn't plan our wedding as yet, we will have to put that on hold until our financial problems are sorted...

I went through the paper bag, and it was chips, with chicken, rolls, and juice just what i needed..

She sat down across me..

Her: Are you winning?

I shook my head no..

Her: Can i have a look?

I gave her the books and she went through them as i was eating...

I like Dima because not only is she sweet and dedicated, but she's smart too..

[AFTER 5MIN]

Her: Please don't find this disrespectful..

I looked at her..

Her: i think i know how to ease your financial burdens..

I almost choked on my chips, how can she find a solution to my problem so quickly.. I mean i have went through those books for a week and I couldn't find any solution..

Her: first of all i think that we should cut the designer clothes from Overseas, that's what's Killing you mostly...

Me: i can't do that..

Her: Why sell off someone's work and name if you can sell off your own?

I looked at her confused..

Her: Look, if you sell anything for Michael Kors, you actually getting him more customers and you making him rich. Look at this way, if I'm wearing something made by Michael kors, and my friends like it how many of them would actually come here and buy the item?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Her: Exactly, why come here and buy it at an expensive price while you can just order online for a lesser price excluding the shipping prices...

I hate to admit it, but she was right..

Her: i can draft sketches for you, then you send to the factory and they design the clothes for you.. Yes you might lose rich customers but hey start your own brand rather than working on someone else's brand...

I looked at her..

Me: Where have you been all my life?

She chuckled..

Her: I'll come with the sketches tomorrow so that you can take a look at them and see if you like them..

Me: Please do..

She stood up..

Her: Let me go back to the front before someone comes in and Steals..

Me: You'll go for lunch after i have finished my lunch..

Her: No it's okay, i already ate a pie earlier so I'm still fine..

I looked at her and smiled..

Me: Thank you for being an Angel in my life..

Her: Thank you for giving me this job..

She smiled at me and went back to the front, while i continued eating..

[ZUKO]

I had just finished my physio session, my physiotherapist is teaching me how to walk again..

The road to recovery is not easy, alot of damage was done to me that physiotherapy and speech therapy had to intervene...

Both the therapists and the doctors were very impressed with my recovery and how dedicated i was, i mean i had to be dedicated if i wanted to get out of here..

My physiotherapist put me back on my wheelchair, after our intense session my legs were paining...

I looked at Funi's picture on the wall... I am doing this for her, i need to make a full recovery so that i can get my Bunju back..

Me: Can we go again for 5min?

She looked at me..

Her: No MQ we shouldn't overdo it, you will strain your muscles and then we will be back to square one..

She looked at the picture too...

Her: Someone who means alot to you?

I nodded..

Her: i haven't seen her coming to visit to you..

Me: That's because...

Knowing that Funi is happy with another man, especially my enemy brings out the devil in me....

She's supposed to be with me, to be happy with me and no one else....

I wheeled myself to the wall and i looked at her picture again. The rage built up inside of me, i was beyond angry, i felt like i wanted to murder someone..

Me: Damn you Braga!! She's mine!!!

I am not gonna let that fool win, never!

PART 64 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:48] Ron: PART 65 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[FUNI]

Dima and i knocked off early at 16:00. There wasn't much to do, and we had no customers either..

Dima: Tomorrow i will come with a few of my sketches..

Me: Yes please don't forget..

Her: i won't...

Me: See you tomorrow..

I started walking away..

Her: Funi..

I stopped and looked at her, she then came up to me..

Her: I'm really sorry that we had to cut and do away with the Designer clothes, but that's the only way we gonna save the boutique..

Me: i understand your intentions behind that and i don't blame you..

She smiled at me..

Her: I'll see you tomorrow then

Me: Tomorrow it is..

She walked away all excited..

Okay now i am starting not to be sure about Dima.. She is too sweet, she is too involved in saving my boutique. It's just unusual for someone to go this much into helping save a boutique that is drowning far down at the bottom of the sea and expect not much of a pay, something was just off.....

What Olona and Thalue did, made me to have less trust in people...

I went to my mazda 3, i unlocked it and went inside...

Cowen wanted to buy me a new car but because our financial problems he decided to give me his mazda 3...

I had gotten my license a few weeks back, so i was legal to be on the road.....

As i was on my way home i was busy thinking about random things, until something hit my mind...

When my Gynaecologist Dr Nora sent a sample of my urine to the lab to be tested the results came back positive and that i was 2months and 3 weeks pregnant.. That was very odd i should be at least 3 months and a couple of weeks pregnant, i should be approaching 4 months judging from the pregnancy tests i took....

I got home, and Cowen was sitting at the table with his laptop and a few documents..

Me: i thought you'll be at work..

Him: i decided to take a day off, need to catch up on my studies...

Me: Ohw..

I threw my bag on the couch and went up to him..

Me: What are you studying?

He pulled me closer and kissed my tummy, with his hand around my waist...

Him: Just some complicated ish..

I pulled the chair next to me and sat down next to him.. I then looked at him..

Him: am i in trouble?

Me: No i need to talk to you about something..

Him: Okay..

Me: Remember when i showed you the pregnancy tests some while back?

He nodded his head..

Me: How come the lab results come back to me being 2 months pregnant, ain't i supposed to be far ahead?

Him: Dr Nora actually E-mailed me the lab results...

Me: She did?

Him: Ya yesterday..

Me: You guys are back to discussing me again?

Him: it's not like that...

Me: Its like what then?

Him: We...

He kept quiet and looked at me for a while..

Him: Can we go back to the pregnancy situation..

Me: Okay, but we surely gonna come back to this topic..

Him: Were you on some birth control method?

Me: Ya i have been using pentagon but i think i skipped a few dates.. My last time when i had it, i don't really remember..

Him: Where you using the one for 2 or 3 months?

Me: 3 months..

Him: Damn!!

Me: Why is my baby gonna be affected?

Him: No that one is hard to wean off..

I looked at him..

Him: i once had a patient who was on that, but since she was ready to start her own family she stopped using it.. She came regularly to complain that it's been 3 months since she was weaned off the pentagon but still she can't fall pregnancy.. Some other people it takes longer for if to get out of their system hence your delayed pregnancy.. I don't think you fell pregnant the first time we had unprotected sex...

Me: But the pregnancy test?

Him: Pregnancy tests are not 100% accurate same as birth control methods, that's why i should've taken you to Nora after that pregnancy test so they could do a lab test...

Me: But what could've made the pregnancy test to say positive, while i was not pregnant...

Him: i think your urine had traces of Corpus leutum,that's what made it to be inaccurate..

Me: Huh?

Him: The pituitary gland at the Base of your brain brings about alot of hormones.. Tell me did you learn about the menstrual cycle at school?

Me: Well i... Cowen i was studying to pass at school and not to remember..

He chuckled..

Him: Well there's certain hormones that play a role in the menstrual cycle, such as Follicle stimulating hormone, lutenising hormone, Oestrogen, and progesterone..

Me: Okay..

Him: The two major hormones are Oestrogen and Progesterone.. Oestrogen being responsible to bring about menstruation, and progesterone responsible to bring about Pregnancy.. Are you still with me?

Me: Yes..

Him: When the ovum has matured, the ovary will release it and it will go to the fallopian tubes.. We calle that ovulation which happens on day 14..progesterone will increase, and Oestrogen will decrease because pregnancy can accour at anytime, you at a high risk of falling pregnant and then that's when a female will secret Corpus leutum a yellowish fluid.. So the Ovum will wait there in the fallopian tubes for a spermatozoa to fertilise it, and if fertilisation doesn't occur after a few days progesterone will decrease and Oestrogen will increase bringing about menstruation. The unfertilized Ovum will be shed together with the Endometrium.. So in your case you know that pentagon brings about the imbalance of hormones and irregular menstruation.....

When the Ovum was still maturing in your ovary, the luteinizing hormone secreted Corpus leutum then that's what the pregnancy test detected on your urine making it inaccurate while there wasn't ovulation that took place because there might have still been traces of pentagon in your system....

Me: So ovulation didn't take place?

Him: No there was just an imbalance of hormones making progesterone to dominate over oestrogen that's where confusion came about in your reproductive system.. The miscommunication of your sex hormones..

I won't lie i was very confused all this medical and biological terms went in one ear and came out of the other ear..

Me: Am i pregnant or what?

He laughed..

Him: You are pregnant, 2months and 3 weeks pregnant...

Me: The hormones are not playing with me right?

Him: No they not..

Me: Then good..

I looked at him..

Me: i think i should cook, i mean we can't afford to misuse money on Takeaways..

He looked down..

Him: Yea probably..

This financial struggle was really killing Cowen, not being able to provide for me and his family like he used too before made him feel less of a man.. Although he tried not to show it, but i could see it was killing him inside of which it was killing me too. I mean i feel responsible for everything he bought that Boutique for me and now it's not making money, i swear at that moment i felt like meeting up with Riley and giving him a piece of my mind...

[ZUKO]

I was sitting on my bed with my laptop, just because i was in hospital doesn't mean that i cannot run my company..

I was checking the figures, if my company was making money or losing money.. Fortunately it was making money, guess i have the best team..

I was disturbed by someone clearing their throat, i looked at the door and it was Zakes..

Him: Ntwana..

Me: Yeah dog..

Him: Zithini?

Me: Ahh I'm getting there

I closed my laptop..

Me: i hope you have good news..

Him: straight to business huh?

Me: You know i don't like games

Him: i did find someone who can bring down Braga for you, and his crew..

Me: Its about time!!

Him: There's only one problem..

Me: I don't wanna hear problems dog i want solutions..

Him: His the best i got for now.. Problem is his in jail..

Me: Then we'll bail him out..

Him: That's where the problem is.. He got life without the possibility of parole.. He is not coming out..

That's just Great, Zakes is very useless to me..

Zakes: But..

Me: But?

He handed me an envelope, i opened it and was pictures..

Me: Fuck how did you get this?

Him: i have my ways.. I think we can break them up with that for now until we find a way to break out our main man out of jail..

I looked at the pics and smiled..

Me: i doubted you at first Bra, but this.. Shit!!!

Him: It's a killer..

Me: if Funi thinks I'm evil wait until she sees what her Mr perfect is capable off..

This was my ticket to getting Funi back..

PART 65 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:49] Ron: PART 66 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

FUNI

Cowen and i were sitting on the couch, and watching TV...

He was laying his head on my thighs, and i was playing with his short soft hair...

We were watching some typical crime Series that he liked, and i was thinking mostly than watching....

Me: Cowen..

He turned and looked at me..

Me: I'm thinking of selling the boutique..

Him: Why would you wanna do that for?

Me: It's the one that's Killing us..

I mean you bought it for a high price and it's not making us any money...

Him: Don't be crazy...

Me: But..

Him: No Funi i don't wanna hear it..

Me: Why can't you see things like i do?

Him: Why do you have such little faith in you?

Me: Cowen..

Him: No bubu i bought you that boutique because it's your dream.. I believe you can turn it into something big, now what you need to do is to believe in yourself...

Me: But i am drowning in debts..

Him: No business was started in an easy Way....Some other people had to quit their jobs and sell their properties to make their dreams a reality.. You have the potential to make your boutique a success, and you also have the potential to destroy it...

I hate that his always right..

Me: i hate that you always right..

He put his hand around my neck and pulled me closer, then he kissed me..

Him: i believe in you, never forget that..

I smiled at him, as he smiled at me too....

Me: Let me go bath and sleep, tomorrow i have an early morning..

Him: Okay..

Me: plus Dima wants to show me some of her designs..

Him: sounds like this Dima person is very committed..

Me: She is, and that scares me alot...

Him: Why?

Me: Well remember how i trusted Olona and Funi, then remember what happened?

Him: Don't let what happened between those two make you not to trust anyone..

Me: Well we will see as time goes on if Dima is sincere.....

The elevator opened and Shabba walked in...

Shabba: wad up love birds?

Me: Can't you just press the intercom and wait for us to tell you to come upstairs, why can't you be like everyone else?

He looked at me for a while without saying anything...

Him: Okay... Anyway this came in for you, the Delivery man couldn't make it upstairs...

It was a brown envelope that addressed to me...

Cowen: What Is that?

Me: i don't know...

Him: Well open it..

I looked at it..

Me: probably more bills..

Shabba: i forgot that you guys are drowning In debt..

Me: Whatever Shabba!!.. Leme just go and bath then go to bed..

I started walking to the stairs..

Shabba: But-her-cheeks.. I heard there's a new sexy pair of legs at your boutique..

Me: Stay away from my assistant Shabba...

Shabba: How do i stay away when i haven't even seen her?

Me: Stay away!!!

I said that while walking upstairs to bath...i looked at the envelope one more time, then just stuffed it in my drawer...

I then went to take a relaxing bath..

#FUNI

I couldn't sleep at all i was waiting for news that Funi left Braga after opening that envelope, but i heard nothing...

It was very frustrating, she should've got the envelope by now and had opened it.. What's taking her soo damn long???

I took my phone and called Zakes immediately.. He answered on the second call..

Him: MQ..

Me: Why is Funi still with Braga?

Zakes: i don't follow..

Me: Was the envelope sent?

Him: Yes i did send it..

Me: Then what's taking so fucken long?

Him: i have no idea man..

I hunged up, i don't like it when things don't go my way.. Tomorrow i must get out of here and go handle everything myself..

I won't lie i need the best and the strongest In this Gangster game to bring Braga down..

Nightmares of what he did to me and my mother still haunt me, i cannot face him alone, yes i am scared to face him alone he will crush me like a bug....

I laid in my bed thinking about what Zakes suggested, maybe i should take his offer and go get this person from jail...

#FUNI

The following morning, i woke up and prepared myself for work..

I had no motivation to go to the boutique whatsoever, but hey i have to do what i have to do...

I opened my drawer to get my lipstick and i saw the envelope.. I tried ignoring it but i couldn't anymore, curiosity was killing me like it killed a cat...

I took it out and opened it, there was pictures inside i took them out and looked at them....

My heart stopped beating for a minute or two as i looked at those pictures.. I don't know if someone was playing mind games or what but those pics drained my strength, they made my

knees weak and they made my heart skipped a beat every second....

There was a note that accompanied the pics.. And it read:

"I paid Dr Cowen to put the parasite in your father's heart, Cowen aka Braga is not who you think he is, and the pictures prove it"..

PART 66 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:50] Ron: PART 67 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I was still holding the pictures in disbelief when Cowen walked in..

Him: I forgot my laptop..

I sat down on the bed, before I faint.....

He looked at me..

Him: Are you alright?

A panic attack crept in immediately.. This is a man that I love with all my heart, and he killed my Father....

He came to me..

Him: What's wrong?

My throat wasn't raising any words.. I handed him the pictures and he looked at them....

Him: Wtf, where did you get this?? Do you know that the person who leaked this can get arrested?..

I looked at him, with tears in my eyes..

Me: That's my father..

Him: Ohw.. I'm sorry for what happened to him..

Me: You should be sorry for killing him!!...

He looked at me very shocked..

Him: What???

Me: Cowen did you kill my father?

He looked at me for a while, and then sent out a laugh...

Him: What's the use of explaining if you already made up your mind about me..

He looked at the pictures again...

Him: See what his doing to us?

Me: Ohhh please Cowen don't paint this on him!! This pictures show you operating my father!! Is this the skeletons he was talking about?

Him: do you still love him?

I looked at him not believing what he just asked me..

Him: Here you are defending and taking his side than mine, same shit you did with Tamara!!

Me: That's different..

Him: i don't know what's the use of our relationship if we don't have trust. No rephrase that, you don't trust me!!

Me: Ohhhh so you want out?

He kept quiet..

Me: You want out Cowen?

Him: I never said that..

Me: Then what are you saying, Braga?

He gave me that serious look he always gives me when I call him with that name..

He went and took his laptop..

Him: I'll see you when i get back.

Me: You won't find me here!

He turned and looked at me..

Me: This is hard, but it's best for the both of us...i think we should end our relationship...

He kept quiet for a very long before saying something on my statement...

Him: is that what you want?

That's not what i expected him to say, i thought he was probably gonna fight for me and all that..

Me: Y.. Yes..

That word was hard to utter..

He looked down,then looked at me again..

Him: if that's what you want, I'll go with it..

He then walked up to the door..

Me: So you not even gonna fight for me?

Him: You fight with someone who is willing to fight with you.. You confused Funi, you love me at the same time a piece of your heart belongs to him.. I am not like him, I'm not gonna pull out a gun on you and beat you to death to make you stay with me....if leaving me feels right to you then there's nothing i can do.....

I won't lie, at that moment i felt like my heart was ripped out of my chest.. I love Cowen and it hurts leaving him, but at the same time his right i don't trust him...

He opened the door, and before he walked out he looked at me..

Him: i love you Funi, and i will never hurt you.. Especially not like this..

He closed the door and went.. Tears were now flowing,i felt broken, hurt i had all those uncomfortable feelings....This truly hurts...

[ZUKO]

The doctor was busy looking at me while writing my prescription..

Him: Mr Mqela..

Me: i said i will recover at home, and i will..

I had my walking stick with me, i still could feel the excruciating pain in my legs but one thing i wasn't gonna accept is to be wheelchair-bound..

Dr: You are straining yourself, you still need to be in a wheelchair for..

Me: Eyy khawubhale ndifuna uk'goduka.. (just write i wanna Leave)...

Zakes came in as i was arguing with the Doctor.. Zakes is more of a puppet to me than an actual friend, he tells himself that his my friend but I'm using him...

Zakes: Are you ready?

Me: ya i just...

All of a sudden i felt like i was gonna collapse, my legs were giving up on me.. The doctor came to hold me and sat me on the wheelchair..

Dr: This is what I'm scared off.. You coming alright but straining yourself, you might relapse..

Me: sign the damn thing so i can go!!!

He finished the Prescription and handed it to me..

I looked at Zakes, he took my things and wheeled me out of the hospital...

Me: i am thinking we should pass by at the prison to see your friend..

Zakes: Are you sure about that?

Me: Have i ever been unsure about anything?

Him: I'll take you there..

Me: Good..

I cannot wait to see this guy, maybe he can be what I am looking for...

[FUNI]

I had packed my things, i was leaving Cowen for real..

I have been driving around not knowing where to go. I thought of going to Jozi but me and her haven't been talking, gonna be awkward just showing up with bags.....

Brown wouldn't mind having me around, but i don't wanna be a burden..

After doing alot of thinking, one person came to my mind.. I took my phone and called him, lucky for me he didn't take long to answer..

Shabba: Shabs here..

I couldn't speak, i was crying..

Shabba: Hello??

I cleared my throat..

Me: Its Funi..

Him: Hey Funi, are you alright?

Me: No.. I'm.. I am currently homeless..

He laughed.. But stopped laughing when he heard me crying..

Him: Are you serious? What happened?

Me: Long story..

Him: Okay come to my flat and we'll sort this out.. I'll Sms you the address..

Me: Thank you..

I hunged up and he Smsed me the address...

[ZUKO]

We got to Modabbee Prison, and we were sitting at the visiting area while waiting for this guy...

I looked around and this was no place for a person to find themselves in, just being here visiting gives me the creeps.....

The door opened, and the guard ushered him in.....

Both his hands and feet were chained, we had to have at least 3 Guards present there because he is ruled as the most dangerous thug inside there...

He sat down opposite us.. I won't lie this guy scared me a little..

Zakes: Laizer my man..

Zakes extended his hand, but the nigga just looked at it... Zakes withdrew..

Zakes: Zuks this is Mpumelelo Nkosi, but they call him Laizer, and the ladies call him Lai Lai..

I looked at him..

Me: Nice to meet you..

He didn't say anything, he then looked at Zakes...

Him: Ubekwa yini la? (what are you doing here)

Zakes looked at me, then looked at him..

Zakes: We.. Business brought us here...

Laizer: Nomayini ang'gcwali saan (whatever it is, I'm not interested)..

Zakes: Ahhhh Laizer Ntwana..

Laizer stood up, i looked at Zakes and he shrugged his shoulders...

PART 67 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:51] Ron: PART 68 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I got to Shabba's place. He lives in a gated community and his flat is very beautiful and looks very expensive..

It wasn't clean, and wasn't that dirty either just a few things lying around...

He was standing by the kitchen counter when i Walked in, he was wearing a white vest, with black track pants, sleepers and a beanie hat...

Looking at his outfit i could see that he had no intentions of going out.....

He stood there then looked at me..

Him: Come here...

I went up to him and he gave me a very warm hug, just what i needed..

Him: Im sorry..

I am glad that he wasn't his joking self, because i was not really down for that...

Although my heart was broken, and i wanted to cry but i had cried alot in the car that i didn't have any tears anymore.....

Me: Can i please stay here until i know where to go?

Him: You can stay here as long as you want, I'm even glad that you considered me first...

Me: Yeah..

My phone rang. I took it out and it was Dimakatso...

Me: Agh..

Shabba: What's wrong?

Me: i was supposed to be at work by 09:00, now it's 10:00..

Shabba: You can still go..

Me: i don't feel like going anymore..

Him: Then you can work from the flat..

Me: That's not a bad idea.. Now i don't know how Dima is gonna get here..

Him: i can fetch her..

I looked at him..

Me: Yeah right..

Him: No I'm for real...

I looked at him, i could have him fetch her but would she allow..

After a few tries and rings i answered....

Me: Hey..

Her: Hey Funi, are you on your way?

Me: uhm unfortunately no.. Sorry about that..

Her: Ohw..

Me: Look Dima I'll have someone fetch you, we can work from my place..

Her: Okay

Me: Its a guy, his name is Shabba..

Her: i don't know Funi..

Me: I'll come with him then..

Her: That would be better..

Me: We on our way..

Her: Okay I'll wait..

Me: Okay..

I looked at Shabba..

Me: She has agreed but I'm coming with..

Him: i was hoping it would just be me and her...

Me:Don't start..

Her: Fine you'll come with..leme go get ready..

He walked to the bathroom while i sat there alone and thinking..

I am already missing Cowen, I'm used to just being me and him.. For the fact that he wasn't here, really got to me....

I tried searching for feelings that i had for Zuko, but there wasn't any.....

After all he put me through, i felt nothing but Anger for him...

I love Cowen with all my heart and soul.. Not having him here and things being like this between us i was truly broken....

I just sat there all crying, i let all the tears pour out like a river..

A part of me just wanna stop this madness and go back to him, but another part of me still

reminded me of what he did....

He took away the only person that mattered in my life before him, i mean there's even pictures to prove it....

[ZUKO]

Unfortunately Laizer meant it when he said he is not interested in doing business with us.. He didn't even wanna hear what we had to say....

If he thinks that I'm just gonna give up on him, he has another thing coming.....

The car parked at the driveway of my house,finally i am home...

Zakes got my things while i got out of the car and we made our way in...

.

We found Ziyanda and my sister Fiks at the kitchen....

Me: Molweni....

They both looked at me, and fiks ran up to me and hugged me..

Her: Ohh my word Zuko i was worried about you!

Me: Not soo tight..

She let go...

Her: Sorry...

She then looked at me and my walking stick..

Her: What happened? I come home and hear that you at the hospital..

Me: Funi and her new boyfriend happened...

Her: What do you mean?

Me: Long story..

Her: i never liked that girl, i knew she was bad news from the start..

Me: Don't start...

I looked at Ziyanda...

Me: Where is my boy?

Ziyanda: daycare...

Me: Okay... Listen here both of you, Funi is gonna come back soon i would like you guys to treat her with respect....

Fiks: i thought you said she has a bf..

Me: Temporarily..

Fiks: Zuko are you hearing yourself? If she and her bf did this to you there's no telling what she can do next...

Me: Fikile!!!

Her: No Zuko!!! Funi is evil and..

Me: Fikile Mqela i am warning you!!!!!!!!!!!! (Yelling)

Me: Now take back what you've just said about Funi..

She clicked her tongue and folded her arms..

Me: if you gonna be like this, then you might as well go home!

Fiks: i wish mom was here... Is she even responsible for mom's disappearance??

I looked at her..

Her: No one has heard from mom in months..

Ziyanda: your Brother even alerted the Cops, there's even a campaign that was started "HELP FIND BONGI"....

All the memories came back of what happened that day, my mom was bombed alive....

PART 68 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:52] Ron: PART 69 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

We got to the boutique to get Dima.. She was already standing at the door with her bag, and another flatboard bag of which i assume it has her sketches...

Me:i am really sorry...

Her: Its okay

Shabba: Hi..

Dima: Hi..

The was alot of blushing from her side, she was all looking down and what not...

Me: Shabba this is my assistant Dima, and Dima this Shabba he is more like a little brother to

me....

Shabba extended his hand to Dima...

Shabba: Nice knowing you Dima..

Dima: same here..

Me: We can go now..

Shabba: i think we should eat breakfast first.. I'll take both of you out...

Me: Who can say no to free breakfast...

We all got to the car, and Shabba took out out for breakfast....

We went to Wimpy i love wimpy breakfast..

Me: So Dima do you have the sketches?

Her: Yes i do, and i have designed a logo for the Boutique...

Me: Hmmmm tell me more..

Her: I think we can call the Boutique Fusion..

Me: Carry on...

Her: All the sketches are a fusion of two colours and materials, so that's why i thought "Fusion" would best describe your brand and designs....

Shabba: Not just a pretty face but she got brains too.. Unlike someone i know...

I punched him on his arm....

Me: i like it..

The waitress came with our order..

Me: We'll continue with this at home...

We started eating...

Shabba: wimpy breakfast is too nice..

Me: Very...

My phone rang, i took it out from my pocket and it was my Gynaecologist Dr Nora...

Me: Dr Nora

Her: Where are you?

Me: i am out with friends..

Her: Don't tell me that you have forgotten about our appointment. We had an appointment at 10:00 now it's 11:30..

Me: Was it today?

Her: Are you kidding me?

Me: Can't we schedule?

Her: little girl i don't have time for games..

Me: Fine I'll be there..

I hunged up and looked at Them..

Dima: is everything okay?

Me: i forgot that i have an appointment with my Gynaecologist..

Shabba: so?

Me: i have to go, we can have all of this as a takeaway...

Shabba: Let's go then..

We asked waitress to make our breakfast a takeaway and she did, then after we drove to the Gynaecologist.....

We arrived there and i went to her office, while Dima and Shabba waited for me at the reception...

Me: Dr Nora i am very sorry..

Dr Nora is proclaimed the best Gynaecologist, of all time....

She has been a Gynaecologist for 20 years or so, today she's 63 and still going strong....

Dr Nora is not your typical Gynaecologist though, she shouts, she yells and all that....

Her: Do you know that i have other patients to attend too?

Me: Yes mam

Her: Just because you engaged to a Doctor who happens to be a good friend of mine, doesn't mean I'll give you special treatment...

I rolled my eyes....

Me: Yes mam..

Her: get on the bed...

I took off my shoes and i hopped on the bed...

The door opened, as i was laying there and my ever so handsome and charming Fiancé walked in...

Him: am i late?

Dr: No you are just in time...

He pulled a chair and sat next to me....

Dr: I'll go get your file..

She went out to get the file.....

Things were very awkward, we didn't say nothing to each other until Dr Nora came back..

Dr: Let's begin...

She got the gel and we started with the scan.....

She kept quiet for a while and i started to get worried...

Me: Is everything alright?

Cowen: The heartbeat is too faint...

I looked at him....

Me: Can you let Dr Nora do her job please..

Dr: His right, the heartbeat is too faint..

She looked at me.

Her: Have you been stressed lately?

I looked at Cowen..

Me: You can say that..

Dr: Cowen are you stressing my patient?...

He giggled...

Him: You wish, maybe you can ask her psycho ex boyfriend..

I looked at Dr Nora..

Me: Are we done?

Her: Not exactly..

Me: i think we are..

I got out of bed, got the paper towel and wiped off the gel..

Cowen: Were her ex is concerned you cannot say shit!!!....

I wore my shoes and Walked out..

[ZUKO]

I was going through my files trying to see what's been happening in my company when i got a call from Zakes..

Me: Ntwana...

Him: i have good news for you..

Me: Yea?

Him: Funi has left Cowen, she even moved out..

Me: Wow.. That's the best news ever..

Him: but i have bad news also..

Me: What?

Him: She's pregnant..

That came across as a shock to me..

Me: What???

Him: Pregnant and engaged..

Me: i think its time for plan B..

Him: Should i implement the plan?

Me: please do

Funi won't see what hit her..

[FUNI]

I was sitting at the kitchen table, looking at those pictures while crying...

How will Cowen and i ever get through this? How do we get over him killing my father..

Shabba and Dima came in, they were gone to get Ice creams...

Dima: Funi are you okay?

I nodded my head.. She looked at the pictures...

Her: Ohhh ya I've read about this incident..

I looked at her..

Her: Dr Cowen and other surgeons were presented with this case of a patient with a parasite in his heart.. They tried removing it but unfortunately they couldn't..

Me: What are you talking about?

Her: You didn't read about this in the newspapers? Although this pictures look like it has been tempered with...

She took out her phone and showed me..

Her: This is the original picture, off which it was wrong to be leaked to the Internet..

The picture showed Cowen and other surgeons together with Nurses at the Red Cross hospital..

Me: ohh my God i am soo stupid!!

Dima: Why?

Me: Cowen didn't kill my father, they tried to save him!!!

I stood up...

Shabba: were are you going?

Me: to get my man...

I took my car keys and went to my car... How can i be this stupid??

As i was driving i took my phone and called Cowen.. He answered after a while... Fortunately i came to a red light..

Him: Funi..

Me: Baby i am so sorry.. I have been stupid!!! You right... Zuko tried to set you up.. I love you and i am coming home!!!

Those were the only words i remember saying, when a car ran a red light and knocked me out of

the road... My car rolled and worse i wasn't wearing a seatbelt...

PART 69 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:53] Ron: PART 70 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[COWEN]

Funi had an accident her car was found at the side of the road.....

What was battling about the whole ordeal was that, her body was not in the car off which makes me think that her psycho ex had something to do with her accident,all i heard when we were talking on the phone was her screaming.....

I know Funi and i, haven't been seeing eye to eye lately but that's my woman and i love her with all my being, she's my everything...

I was at the warehouse with the whole team, I had contacted them after i heard of this incident..

Me: i know what im about to ask you guys is totally off. The Skulls shouldn't be handling personal affairs but at this point in time, I am very desperate...

I looked at them as i was busy pacing up and down...

Me: Someone kidnapped my woman. Someone is really testing me.. I'm gonna need everyone to be on their feet. Find out everything you can about MQ, and how this connects him to the kidnapping...

I have no doubt that MQ is behind this, he is the one who can go this far..

The crew agreed to help out, they went out to start the investigations..

MQ is not smart, i know he has a few lose ends and that is what's going to lead me to him...

Shabba came up to me...

Him: This is all my fault..

Me: No man..

Him: i shouldn't have let her go out alone..

Me: No one was prepared for this..

Him: You right about that, but i still shouldn't have let her go..

Me: ya but we'll get to the bottom of this...

Him: Where do we start?

Me: We need to get someone close to him who knows about his business and shady dealings..

Shabba: You think his not doing this alone?

Me: No.. He has to have a right hand man.

Shabba: I'll get on with that..

Me: Cool man..

When i find him, i will reunite him with his mother...

[FUNI]

I opened my eyes and i was a bit dizzy, and very much in pain...

I looked around and i wasn't familiar with my surroundings...

I tried to move but i felt some excruciating pain arising from my abdominal area.. I ran my hand on that area, and found that i had been operated..

I didn't know what was happening, and there was no one around to explain to me..

After a few seconds, the door opened and Zuko walked in.. He was with a Doctor...

He looked at me for a long time without saying anything..

The fear creped in again, I came to realise how scared i was of him..

The Doctor cleared his throat, bringing us back to reality..

Zuko: Is she gonna be fine?

Dr: Yes, she just has to take it easy..

Me: wha...what did you do to me?

He looked at me..

Him: Thank you Doc, i think i will have to break this news to her..

Dr: I'll be in touch

Zuko: Ofcause.

The doctor walked out, and Zuko made his way to me..

My heart started beating fast, my throat became dry..

He sat next to me and looked at me..

Him: You still look beautiful as always...

Me: What did you do to me Zuko?

Him: Remember the first time when we met? You were very feisty, rude, and heavy on the bottle... I looked at you and told myself that this is the woman i am going to marry..

I know that him talking like that is supposed to bring back memories of us, and the love that we had for each other. But i seriously didn't feel anything for Zuko at all, all i felt for him was just fear and Anger..

He stretched out his hand to touch my braids but i moved my head a little..

Him: You think I'm gonna hurt you?

He has hurt me alot of times, and i know that he can do it again..

Him: i love you Funi, I'm not gonna hurt you..

Me: What did you do to me Zuko, why am i In soo much pain?

Him: You had an accident, i had to get the best Doctor to wake you up and bring you back from that shock..

Me: My??.. Why is my abdominal area soo painful?? Why was i operated?

Him: Ohw ya i was rectifying a mistake..

Me: What did you do?

Him: i had that curse removed from you..

I was hoping that he wasn't gonna say that..

Me: You.. You.. My baby??

He put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: Bunju everything is fine now, we finally gonna be together without Anything standing between us...

Me: You killed my baby Zuko?

Him: it was a curse, that Cowen put in you!!

Me: You killed my baby?

Him: Stop saying that!!!

Zuko has succeeded in hurting me, in crushing my soul..

[COWEN]

I was sitting there and starring at Funi's picture....

I was wondering if she was scared, what that bastard Is doing to her.

What was worse was that, i had nowhere to start looking for her..

Shabba walked in..

Him: Braga..

I looked at him..

Him: We have found someone who works closely with MQ

Me: Who?

Him: He goes by the name of Zakes..

Me: Have you found out were he stays?

Him: Yeap, he is married to Funi's cousin..

Me: Why would he do this? Doesn't he know that what his doing can hurt his wife?

Shabba: Not if the wife knows about it..

Me: You think Funi's cousin knows about this?

Shabba: Yeap

Me: Get her the fuck here, she has a lot of questions to answer!!!

Shabba: i am on it boss...

[FUNI]

I was crushed, i felt like my whole world has ended just like the Mayans predicted....

A part of me and Cowen was taken away from us.. I will never be able to hold my baby, kiss my baby, or experience how it feels to be a mother..

I couldn't stop the tears, i was shuttered i felt like i didn't wanna live anymore. If it wasn't for Cowen, i probably would kill myself now..

PART 70 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:53] Ron: PART 71 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[COWEN]

RESCUE-PART 1

I decided to meet up with Funi's cousin at a restaurant instead of tying her up in a chair and beating the living daylights out her..

She didn't keep me waiting, she showed up in time.....

Me: Thank you for coming...

I gave her a handshake. She was beautiful and big, assuming she's 6 months pregnant...

We sat down..

Me: like i said on the phone I'm Cowen, Sean Cowen.. I am your sister's fiancé..

Her: I'm Jozi, Funi's cousin.. Wow Funi never told me about you. I don't blame her though, we haven't spoken for a very long time..

Me: When was the last time you spoke to her?

Her: Just before her father's funeral. Think she's still Beating herself about not being there..

She looked around..

Her: i thought Funi would be here..

Me: Ya Funi is...

Her: She's what?

Me: kidnapped

She freaked out..

Her: What? What do you mean Funi is kidnapped..

Me: Zuko kidnapped her, and i think your husband is in on it...

She didn't look shocked at that statement...

Her: i can't say I'm surprised..

Me: Why?

Her: Zakes is Zuko's friend, he helps him in everything..

Me: That's were you come in..

She looked at me..

Me: i need you to tell me were your husband is..

Her: You want me to betray my husband?

Me: Funi is carrying my baby, they are in danger there's no telling what that psychopath can do.. He killed her father, what If he kills her? Do you want that on your conscious?

She looked down, i think my words were getting to her..

Her: i will tell you were he is, only in one condition..

Me: Okay?

Her: i want my husband returned to me unharmed.. I am 5 months pregnant, i need him i recently lost my job..

That was a hard bargain...

Me: You have my word..

Her: Pen and paper please..

[FUNI]

Food was brought in for me, but i had no intentions in Eating anything....

All i want is for Cowen to find me, i wanna be in his arms right now..

It was a young girl who brought in my food..

Girl: Zuko says this is your favourite

I kept quiet..

Her: You have to eat..

I looked at her..

Me: Why are you doing this? Why are you helping him?

She looked down..

Me: Zuko is a bastard, he doesn't care about you.. His probably gonna kill you when all of this is done...

She still said nothing..

Me: Look i can help you get out of this..

She looked at me..

Her: My parents.. They owe MQ, i am paying for their debts..

Me: like I'm saying i can help you, if you help me..

Her: How?

Me: i need you to call someone, and tell him exactly were i am..

Her: No....

Me: Please.. Please i am begging you.. Zuko he.. He killed my baby and he can kill me too please..

I was now crying..

Me: You a woman, you can feel my pain..

She kept quiet for a while..

Her: What's the number?

I told her..

Her: i can't write it down because they gonna see us through the cameras.. I'll have to memorise it...

Me: Please do...

She took the plate and handed it to me..

Her: Now eat please.. Before you get me in trouble..

I took the plate and started Eating, while praying that she calls Cowen..

[COWEN]

We have got Zakes, we had tied him on the chair.. We gave him blows after blows, but he still wasn't talking he was loyal to this bastard..

Zakes: You can torture and beat me all you want, but i am not saying anything!! Kill me if you want too...

He said that while spitting blood on the ground..

According to me i would've Killed him, but i promised Funi's cousin that i will keep him alive..

Shabba: i don't know what to do now.. This nigga ain't saying anything...

Me: His willing to die for him..

My phone started ringing, i took it out and it was a private number..

Shabba: Maybe it's Zuko..

I answered..

Me: Cowen here..

The person was quiet..

Me: Hello..

The person still said nothing when i was about to hang up a female voice started speaking...

Her: "147 Durban's Road. It's a warehouse she's here"..

Me: Excuse me?

Her: She said i should call you.. She wants you to find her.

Me: Who are you?

I then heard a male voice in the background..

Voice: You little bitch!!!!

Her: Please find her, before they move her..

Then i heard her screaming, and after the line went dead.....

Shabba: What was that?

Me: Guys pack up, we going to Durban's Road... We have found her...

[FUNI]

I heard the girl who was here earlier screaming, i didn't even know what was happening...

I got out of bed and slowly walked up to the door, i was very much in pain i won't lie...

After a few seconds, i heard the door opening...

It wasn't Zuko who came in, was just some nigga..

Him: Trying to escape?

I walked backwards..

He then closed the door..

Me: Were is Zuko?

Him: He just went out... You think you smart neh?

He started walking towards me..

Him: i will show you, what i do to Smart people..

[COWEN]

I was driving like crazy to the location, i had even called the other Skulls who were close to that place to go there....

When i do find this bastard i am going to kill him in the most painful way ever...

PART 71 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:55] Ron: PART 72 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[FUNI]

FINAL_RESCUE

This man is holding me down, he is pressing me on the bed trying to have his way with me..

I am still in pain due to my Operation that was performed without my consent....

I could feel his breath on my neck, he is busy licking my cheek. I could probably scream, but what's the use? Because no one is gonna hear me...

What's happening takes me back to when Zuko raped me in his car, I'm just hoping this guy could do what he wants to do, and do it quickly.....

As he was holding me down, i see the door opening and Zuko rushes in...

Zuko: What are you doing?

Zuko runs up to him, and he removed him from me then started buttering him....

Zuko: i trust you with my girl, and here you are doing shit...

As I'm trying to get out of bed i am very much in pain, especially in that area were i had been operated..

Zuko: Get up and get away from here!!!

The guy stood up and made a run for it...

Zuko then makes his way to me..

Zuko: How are you? Did he hurt you?

I put my hand on my abdominal area, and i just know that something is wrong... I then suddenly feel dizzy and feel like vomiting..

Me: Zuko something is wrong, I am not feeling good..

Him: was it when he held you down?

I shook my head no..

Me: i feel very sick

Him: Okay let me go call the Doctor..

He helped me to sit on the bed, then went to get the doctor...

But then, he comes back in the room and he is walking backwards..

I then see a lady holding a gun at him, she is not alone other niggas walk in too...

Her: Restrain him..

From what they wearing, i could see that they members of the Skulls..

She then looks at me..

Her: Are you Funi?

I nodded..

Her: My name is Chelsea i am the leader of the Skulls in Durban.. Cowen called us to come....

You don't know how I felt at that moment, even i cannot explain the feeling....

Me: Where is Cowen?

Her: His coming..

She then walks closer to me and looks at me..

Her: You don't look good...

She turns and called one of her people...

Some nigga makes his way to me..

Her: This is Mega, and just like Cowen he a Doctor..

Me: They operated me.. to.. to.. Remove my baby..

He then raises the gown i was wearing, i feel him pinching me were i had been operated..

Me: ouch!!

Him: Sorry...

As that was going on, i saw Chelsea's face changing, it was more like she was disgusted and

the was suddenly a foul smell too...

Mega: Just as i thought, she has an infection..

Chelsea: What do we do now?

Mega: She needs antibiotics and an antiseptic.. We taking her to the hospital...

Me: No..

They look at me..

Me: i wanna see Cowen first..

Mega: But..

Me: Please..

Chelsea took out her phone and Walked out..

I really didn't wanna go without seeing Cowen.....

We were still sitting there waiting for Cowen, im sure it has been hours now and my state of health was deteriorating....

Then at that present moment, the door opened and i saw him walking in with Shabba...

I couldn't stop the tears, i let everything out..

He made his way to me and hugged me, i held on to him tight as if like i was never gonna let go..

Not only was i the only one crying, i heard him sniffing alot...

We broke the hug and he put his hands on my cheeks..

For a moment i even forgot that i was sick..

Me: i thought i was never gonna see you again..

He starts kissing me through my tears..

Him: Im sorry i took long..

He puts his hand on my tummy..

Him: Are you guys alright?

I shook my head no..

Him: What's wrong?

The sickness suddenly comes back, and i vomit on him but he doesn't seem to care..

Him: What happened?

Mega: They operated her and now she has an infection...

Cowen: Oper... Operated her were? And why?

Mega: around her abdominal area..

Me: He removed our baby..

Cowen runs his hand down there until he makes it to my stitches and i flinch in pain...

What happened next, no one was prepared for it...

Cowen took an Axe and made his way to Zuko...

All i heard was Zuko screaming because of my blurry vision i couldn't see much....

Shabba makes his way to me and hugs me...

Him: Im sorry..

Mega: We need to get her to the hospital..

I hold Shabba's hand..

Me: Come with..

Him: Yeah sure..

Shabba picks me up, and we walk out that's the only thing i remember before i passed out..

PART 72 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:55] Ron: PART 73 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

I woke up at the hospital, i was still a bit somehow.. I could still feel a bit of pain arising from my abdominal area...

I slowly moved my eyes and i saw Cowen standing with Mega, looked like they were discussing something....

I was still dizzy, still felt like vomiting and all that...

I cleared my throat and they both looked at me...

Mega: Finally she's awake Let me get the Antibiotics..

He walked out...

Cowen came to me, and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: still feeling not good..

He sat on my small bed beside me..

Me: I'm sorry, all of this is my fault..

He held my hand..

Him: i don't wanna hear you talking like that, no one was prepared for this...

Me: Did you kill him?

He looked down and nodded his head.. That was a relief, no more Zuko in our lives...

Mega came In with the pills and a glass of water, i then gulped down everything.. It was alot of pills...

Me: When can i go home?

Mega: You still not strong enough for me to discharge you..

Me: Can't i be treated back at home?

Him: You don't like Durban?

Me: Its not that I.. I just wanna be home with my fiance..

Him: You will go home once you start Feeling better.. Right now, you in no state to be travelling....

That was a bummer...

Him: I'll come and check up on you later..

Cowen: Thanks man...

Mega: Don't mention it...

He then walked out of the ward..

Me: Please don't leave..

Him: Im not going anywhere.. Try to rest, I'll even sing you a lullaby...

I laughed..

Me: You know how to sing?

He kissed my hand...

Him: For you i can try..

I smiled at him....

He pulled Me closer to him, my head laid on his chest was good hearing his heartbeat....

Him: Close your eyes and try to sleep...

I closed my eyes as he sang me the lullaby...

Him: "i know this girl

And her name is Funi..

And its past her bed

T-I-M-E....

She goes to sleep

And she can just dream

And not have to be

In this stinky hospital with me

So when I feel blue

And don't know what to do

I look at you"

Days passed by i was recovering very well, although i was recovering physically but the emotional pain of losing my only baby was still there...

Cowen and i have not talked about that, i don't know how he feels about that because his not showing any emotion whatsoever..

Today i was getting my results, the doctors had been running tests to determine if my womb will be strong enough to carry a baby full term....

Cowen was not here, I was with Shabba who was reading his Hype magazine..

Cowen didn't come to see me yesterday, and even today he was not coming it was more as if like he was trying to distance himself from me..

Me: Shabba

He looked at me..

Me: Why is Cowen doing this?

He exhaled, and closed the magazine...

Him: That's how Cowen deals with pain, by distancing himself from everyone...

Me: I am also hurting, he is not being fair..

Shabba: Just give him time.....

Me: How much time? Because tomorrow I'm getting discharged and we must go home...

Him: I don't know but he will come around...

Cowen is really being unfair to me..

Mega came in with another doctor..

Mega: I thought Cowen would be here..

Me: You and I both..

Him: Anyway this is Dr Zwane, she's a gynaecologist..

She greeted us.....

Mega: We have your results...

My heart started beating way too fast, God please don't take away the only thing that makes a woman, and that's being able to conceive...

Mega: Relax no damage was done to your womb..

That was a relief and a blessing at the same time... Knowing that I can still have children in the future, was truly a blessing...

The following day, Shabba and I headed back to Pretoria without Cowen.. Apparently he made the trip yesterday didn't even tell me..

I was hurt by what he was doing, and how he was handling everything.....

He doesn't have to shut me out, he must talk to me.....

Shabba and I, would stop here and there to get food, or to refresh..

I just couldn't wait to be home..

...

...

We finally got home after a while, it was late at night and i was tired as hell.. All i wanted to do was to sleep..

Me: Finally we home..

Him: That was a long drive..

We made our way to the elevator,which took us up to the penthouse...

When we got to the penthouse, Cowen was sitting at the lounge with a bottle of whiskey, it was my first time seeing him drinking of which came as a shock to me..

Shabba: Hey man..

Cowen: Hey

He went and gave him a handshake.....

He then looked at me..

Cowen: Thank you for bringing her home safe..

Shabba: No problem....i think i should go, i will see you guys tomorrow..

He came and gave me a hug..

Me: Thank you..

Him: Anytime

He then walked up to the elevator..

I looked at the elevator as it closed, and then i looked at Cowen..

Just to think about how much worried i was about him, and his here drinking..

Him: How are you?

I started slowly making my way to him...

I didn't waste time i threw myself at him, i was hitting him, biting him all of that.. That's how much angry i was at him..

He held both my hands tight..

Him: Wtf Funi???

I was now crying..

Me: You not the only one who lost our baby Cowen!! I am also hurt, and grieving!! Is shutting me out working for you huh?

He got me off him, then took the bottle and approached the stairs without saying anything...

I realised that i hurt myself in my abdominal area as i was busy physically attacking him...

I have never seen Cowen drinking, so for him to be drinking does show me that his hurting...

PART 73 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:56] Ron: PART 74 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

After i had gathered a bit of strength, i slowly walked upstairs to the bedroom..

Going up the stairs inflicted a bit of pain were i was operated..

I thought that i was gonna find Cowen in our bedroom, but he was not there.. Probably he was in the guest room..

I noticed some blue booties, blue baby socks, hat, and a baby vest laid out on the bed.....

I went and sat down next to them probably Cowen bought this some time ago....

Seeing that crushed my heart. There's no word that could describe how broken i was inside..

Losing my first baby like that, really will take me forever to get over.....

Why does it seem like i will never find peace in my life? All my life i have experienced pain after pain and the pain doesn't seem to go away, but instead it gets worse and worse...

I am just 22 about to turn 23 soon but i Have experienced more things than what people in their 40s would experience...

I love Cowen and this is drifting us apart, i know he blames me for letting Zuko into our lives although his not saying it but by how his treating me it says alot...

I cuddled myself in bed while holding those clothes tight and crying my eyes out..

Every pain i have experienced came back to me, the pain of losing my mother, my father, and now my baby.....

I don't see myself being happy ever again, because the pain that i have went through it killed me inside...

I don't know when and how i fell asleep, but i opened my eyes and realised that it was morning. The sun was shinning threw soo bright that i had no choice but to wake up...

I sat up straight and started thinking about what I'm gonna today because i cannot be locked up in this house the whole day...

I stood up and went to the bathroom, my eyes were swollen and heavy...

I looked myself in the mirror, how did things get soo messed up? not long ago Cowen and i we were happy.....

I am way too young for all of this..

I went to run my bath, and just sat there waiting for water to fill up..

[COWEN]

I was at my surgery carrying out my duties for the day....

I was a bit hungover from all the drinking that i did last night, drinking lots of water didn't help that much...

I looked at Funi's picture that was across my table..

I lovethis soul and i feel like i have disappointed her, in ways that i can't even imagine...

Had i been quick, i would've saved both of them...

I am Braga and i don't lose, although i killed Zuko but i still feel like somehow he has won..

I was looking forward to being a father, be it a girl or boy i just wanted to be what i never had, and that is a good father...

If i killed Zuko that time together with his mother then none of this would've happened, i failed Funi i hurt Funi and i can't even Face her..

I am not a person who opens up about my hurts, i don't like talking i just distance myself from everyone and keep everything to myself that's the kind of person i am...

I have never touched alcohol in a very long time, so for me to go back to that after soo long was really fucked up..

I was disturbed by a knock, it was my bubbly and gay Receptionist Sphiwe...

Him: Doc are you ready for your first patient?

Me: Yes..

My patients love Sphiwe, his bubbly and friendly self brings in alot of patients for me, my Surgery is always full...

My first patient was the ever soo complaining Mrs shai..

Her: i have been waiting Cowen..

Mrs Shai has hypertension and diabetes Type 2..

She has been my patient for a very long time now..

Me: i know Mrs shai and I'm sorry..

She walked in and sat down..

Mrs Shai has been married for 30 Years but unfortunately her husband passed on last year..

Me: How are you today Mrs Shai?

Her: i am good Cowen and you?

Me: i am good too.. You missed your appointment last month..

Her: You want me to come everyday so you can eat my money?

Me: Mrs shai i don't charge you a dime..

That was true, i don't charge Mrs Shai a dime..

[FUNI]

After bathing, i put on a towel around my body and Walked downstairs to call Shabba..

I need to go back to my boutique and just keep myself busy there, before i go crazy...

I got the phone and dialled his number...

Him: Shabbaristo here..

Me: Hey Shabba.. It's Funi..

Him: Ohw hey..

Me: Come and fetch me..

Him: were you wanna go?

Me: My boutique

Him: The boutique has been closed ever since your incident..

I heard a familiar voice speaking at the background..

Voice: Babe...

Shabba: I'm coming nunu pie..

Me: Wait is that??

Shabba: Yes it's Dima...

Me: Can i talk to her?

Him: Okay..

There was some silence for a while, then after she spoke..

Her: Funi!!!!...

Me: Hey you..

She was giggling but obviously not at what i was saying..

Her: Shabba stop.. I'm on the phone..

Me: Am i disturbing something?

Her: No..You..

She giggled again..

Her: i said stop I'm on my phone with my boss...

Me: i want you at the boutique tomorrow... Tomorrow morning.

There was silence..

Me: Dima...

Obviously I'm wasting my time here, so i hung up..

I looked at the phone and dialled Cowen's number, after a few rings it took me straight to voicemail..

I didn't say anything i hunged up..

If Cowen wants to play like this, then two can play this game..

PART 74 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:57] Ron: PART 75 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[COWEN]

I asked my mother to join me for lunch, at this point in my life i need some woman advice...

My mother is very insightful and wise, she has been a social worker almost all her life so I'm sure there's some better advice she can give me....

I stood up and hugged her as she approached the table.....

Her: Hi baby how are you?

We sat down..

Me: What can i say..

Her: What's happening?

Me: i have already ordered pizza for myself i don't know what you gonna have..

Her: I'll just go get myself some chef salad..

Me: I'll get the waiter for you..

Her: No sweetheart, that can wait..

I looked at her.

Me: i don't even know were to start..

Her: Start from the beginning..

Me: So Funi's crazy ex kidnapped her...

Her eyes widened..

Her: What? Why wasn't i told?

Me: Everything just happened so fast...

Her: Were is she she now?

Me: She's back at home safe..

The waiter brought my pizza..

Me: Thank you

Her: I'll share your pizza with you..

Me: You welcome..

Her: I'm just grateful that she's safe, poor baby she has been through alot..

Me: That's not the worst..

Her: What's the worst?

Me: She lost the...

I took a deep breath...

Her: Sibusiso..

Me: She lost our baby...

Her jaw dropped that the pizza almost fell from her mouth..

Her: Ohhhh No!!

Me: Yeap, the baby was extracted from her womb at 2 months..

She put her hands on her cheeks..

Her: haibo sbusiso ungitshelani (what are you telling me)

Me: She's been through alot mom..

Mom: Thixo wami kodwa umntwano muntu.. How is she holding up?

Me: She's not holding up at all.. It breaks me seeing her in that state. I feel like i have failed her in a way.. I was supposed to be there, i was supposed to save them and i was late..

She shook her head no..

Her: Don't ever think like that, don't blame yourself.. What happened was nobody's fault...

She held my hand..

Her: My boy, sometimes certain situations are thrown at us but they shouldn't break us.. They meant to toughen us, and not to break us.. For you and Funi to be going through such, it's supposed to strengthen you two, it's supposed to make your relationship stronger and not break you apart...

It's like she knew what was going on in my relationship..

Me: i just can't talk to her Mom..

Her: Don't shut her out.. What i have noticed is that Funi has been through alot, and she's very vulnerable there's no telling what people in her state can do..

Me: i can't mom.. I can't face her, what if i disappointed her, i failed her...

Her: What if she doesn't see it like that?? Sibusiso have you ever wondered how Funi feels? Have you tried talking to her??

Me: Mom...

Her: No baby, i know how you are...I know how you deal with your pain, but back then you were alone now you have Funi.. It's not about you anymore, kodwa it's about you and her...

My mom was right, i need to stop shutting Funi out...

Me: And that's why you the best..

She smiled..

Her: think you need to call her..

Me: I'll do that at the office..

Her: and don't flood yourself with work preventing to go home, I'll be Calling...

I chuckled..

Me: I'll fix everything tonight..

I have been selfish i won't lie,i need to found out how Funi feels i need to consider her feelings in all of this.. After all I'm all she has...

[FUNI]

I have found a couple of whiskies around the house, and i drank my pain away.. Or i think that i was drinking my pain away...

I still had my towel wrapped around my body...

Thinking about all the pain I've been through, made me to drink more and more not knowing that i was reaching my limit...

I started by vomiting, i was weak and still drunk..

Everything was just crashing down in a matter of seconds...

[COWEN]

After the lunch with my mother, i made my way to the office..

I ordered some flowers i wanted to surprise Funi, maybe after talking we can go out for dinner..

I took the phone and called her, but she wasn't answering..

I was calling on the house phone because she doesn't have a cellphone anymore since that accident...

I tried her a few times but she wasn't answering, maybe she's with Dima at the boutique or something..

I hunged up and called Shabba on my cell...

Him: Braga..

Me: Yeah man where is Dima?

Him: She's doing some sketches..

Me: Funi is not there?

Him: No she's not..

Me: ive been trying to call her but she's not answering..

Shabba: That's weird, she called me this morning to come and drive her to the boutique.. I don't think she left the house, she doesn't have a car..

Me: I'll call her again

Him: Cool man, keep me updated..

I called her Again but she wasn't answering, that's when i started to get worried... Something is not right..

I put my phone down and took my things then went to my car..

I told Sphiwe to cancel every remaining appointment for today..

I made sure that the drive to home was short..

I got there and quickly made my way to the elevator, and then up to the penthouse..

The elevator dropped me at the penthouse and i went in..

Me: Funi!!!

The house was very quiet.. I looked for her upstairs in the bedroom, bathroom, guest room and all that but she wasn't there... ..

The place were i found her was on the kitchen floor.. There was vomit everywhere and bottles of whiskies..

I dropped everything and went to her, she was unconscious..

I tried waking her up but nothing..

I took my car keys, and picked her up then raced to my car..

PART 75 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:57] Ron: PART 76 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[COWEN]

It has been 3 days now, Funi still hasn't woken up...

She had alcohol poisoning due to consuming a toxic amount of alcohol..

Her blood alcohol was very high that It was considered toxic.. If i didn't show up in time, I could have lost her...

Again, i have failed my fiance..

I was sitting on the chair next to her, while she was sleeping on that bed peacefully...

Me: i promise you things are gonna change from now on...

A knock disturbed me, i turned and looked at the door it was Dima and Shabba.....

Having them around supporting us, is what we needed..

Shabba: How is she?

Me: Still the Same, but the IV will help as soon as she gets fluids in her body she will be fine, now she's too weak...

Shabba: i should've went there when she called..

Me: i shouldn't have shut her out, i failed her again..

Shabba put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: We still have her at least..

We then heard someone walking in busy shouting, our attention moved from Funi to the door and it was My mother..

Mom: What happened??

I looked at Shabba, he shrugged his shoulders..

She put her bag on the bed,then looked at me...

Her: What happened? I thought you said you fixing this!!!

Me: i was gonna fix it.. I..

Her: You know Cowen if this is how you gonna treat this poor girl, then you might as well just let her go.. She has been through enough!!!

No one said anything..

Her: What exactly happened?

Me: Alcohol poisoning.. But she's gonna be okay...

She looked at her.

Her: Ohw Funi...

The question is who called my mother...

[FUNI]

I don't know what was happening to me, but i found myself at a park one that my father used to take me too when i was young..

I remember the swing, i remember the Slide, and i remember the ice cream truck...

I looked around and i saw kids playing, it was a beautiful day..

There was a level of peace that came over me.. I continued looking around and i couldn't believe who i saw sitting on the bench it was my father...

I slowly made my way to him, am i dead What's happening???

Me: D...Dad??

He was reading a newspaper and put it away as soon as he saw me..

Him: Babzie...

He stood up and came to give me a very warm hug...

I was very emotional, i didn't wanna let him go but eventually i did..

Me: What's happening? Am i dead?

He smiled and shook his head no..

Him: You not dead my baby...

Me: What's happening then?

Him: We don't have alot of time, that white boy still needs you...

Even in death my father still remains sarcastic on my relationships...

We started walking...

Him: Im sorry that i had to make you meet me like that...

Me: Its fine i guess..

I just wanted to know what was going on..

Him: i know you have been feeling guilty about not Attending my funeral..

Me: i wanted to be there, i wanted to bid you farewell...

Him: Im glad you weren't there..

How can he say that?

Him: i know how fragile you are, had you been there you were gonna get a heart attack and we would be ghosts together...

Me: But still, i wanted to be there..

Him: My child, you being there or you not being there doesn't change the fact that i love you.. You should stop beating yourself about not Attending my funeral...

Me: Being there was gonna give me closure...

Him: being there was gonna give you a heart attack...

We then saw a white light arising from the sky...

Him: Its time for me to go, and for you to go back..

Me: No, don't leave me alone.. I wanna go with you..

He shook his head...

Him: Its not your time..

Me: i can't live without you, i can't do this alone..

Him: but you not alone...

Me: What do you mean?

Him: You not alone, remember that you have a family that loves you dearly, just don't shut them out..

He came and hugged me..

Him: i love you my daughter..

Me: i love you too daddy..

Him: i will always be with you, i will always be watching over you...

He then walked to the light and disappeared..

Was hard seeing him go again...

As i was busy standing there crying, i heard familiar voice busy arguing and shouting...

Next thing i know, my spirit is floating around the hospital ward and going back to my body that's when i opened my eyes...

I was feeling weak, and drained like i haven't drank water in a while, but most of all after talking to my father i was at peace. It was like this heavy load had been lifted off my shoulders..

I didn't say anything i watched them talking, mama k was herself as always...

My dad's words played in my head that i am not alone, i do have a family.... And they my crazy family..

Dima looked at me and i signalled to her that she must keep quiet, i was still enjoying the moment..

Shabba: Mama k, you don't understand!

Mama k: i don't have to understand, all im saying is you guys should've looked after her...

Cowen: We do look after her..

Mama k: Then why are we here?

Shabba: We here because she is stubborn!

Me: i am not stubborn..

My voice was scratchy, my throat was dry..

They all kept quiet and looked at me...

Mama k made her way to me..

Her: How are you feeling now miss cover page?

I thought she would've forgotten that name..

Me: Still feeling weak..

I looked at Cowen, he also looked at me...

Mama k: Let's give them some few minutes..

They all went out...

I tried lifting my upper body up so i could sit up straight..

Cowen: Let me help you..

He Prepared the pillows then sat me up straight...

Him: Funi i... Im very sorry ab..

Me: i don't wanna talk about that..

He looked at me, i smiled at me..

He smiled at me too...

Dad's words still played in my head "that white boy still needs you".

Me: as much as i wanna kill you, but im not gonna kill you for now..

Him: i was about to tell you to make it a less painful death...

I chuckled..

Him: i promise you things are gonna change from now on..

Me: i know they will..

He then leaned closer and kissed me..

Him: i love you soo much

Me: i love you too

PART 76 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:58] Ron: PART 77 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[5 Months Later]

Things between me and Cowen were a bliss. He is always there, he is more open and communicates with me about his feelings....

We have been seeing a therapist to help us deal with what happened especially on my side since i couldn't get over the kidnapping and losing my baby..

Cowen is now a qualified heart Surgeon, im very proud of him that he stuck through that until he graduated...

Another thing that's changed is our financial state, we got back to our feet thanks to his big fat cheque he gets from the Skulls, and his surgery thats making him money together with his salary he acquires from performing surgeries at different hospitals..

Im am not much dependent on him though, because my Boutique is doing well now we named it "Funi Fusion"...

I don't have big clients as yet, but we design dresses for matriculants who are going on their matric dance, we also design outfits for local celebrities if they going to functions like Durban july and Awards.....

Dima has been a sweetheart, we went pass the "Employee" and "Employer" relationship we now very close we good friends together with brown..

That's my circle of friendship, those are the only two people i trust...

Things between me and my Cousin Jozi are not pretty Good. After finding out that her Husband

Zakes was involved in my kidnapping i just felt that Its better if we keep our distance from each other.....

It was a Saturday night, we were all couped up at Brown's flat..

Was just me, Dima, and Brown we were just having a mere girls night....

We were talking about things and watching chick fleek movies, while drinking wine and eating chocolates..

I don't drink much anymore, one or two glasses of wine then im fine..

We were sitting on the lounge floor while playing some game....

Brown: So you take a piece of paper, read the word out and say the first thing that comes into mind..

Me: Im game..

Brown: Dima you can start.

Dima took a piece of paper from the bowl, unfolded it then read what was written there..

Her: "Fun"

Me: What's the first thing that comes into your mind?

Dima: Partying..

Brown: Its your turn Funi..

I took a piece of paper, unfolded it and read the word that was written there..

Me: "babies"

They looked at me..

Me: Cute..

Dima: They are cute, just not when are still newborns..

Me: Your turn Brown..

He took out a piece of paper and did the same thing..

Him: "French"

We looked at him..

Him: Tongue..

Me: You nasty..

We laughed..

It was Dima's turn again..

Her: "passion" and the first thing that comes to my mind is.. "kiss"

Me: kiss of passion..

Brown: i like..

Me: My turn..

I took out a paper and again i got "babies"..

Something was just not right, i checked all the remaining papers in the bowl and they were all written "babies"...

I looked at Dima and Brown..

Me: Can i see your papers..

They gave me, and their papers were written "babies"...

Me: What's going on, did Cowen put you guys up to this?

There was a moment of silence for a while..

Me: So he decided to crash our girls night by influencing you guys to pressurise me about having another baby?....

Dima: His just worried about you Funi and so are we..

I didn't wanna break down in front of them..

Me: Let's just talk about something else..

Brown: Okay..

Dima has been a little distant ever since we got here....

Me: What's wrong are you okay?

Her: huh?

Brown: You seem distant..

She exhaled..

Her: Shabba wants to pay Lobola for me..

Me: So quick?

Her: He wants me to move in with him and my mother won't allow until he pays Lobola..

Brown: That's supposed to be a good thing right, i mean you guys love each other?

Dima: Yes, but.

Me: But?

Her: i feel like his hiding something from me, and im sensing Its something big...

Brown and i looked at each other, then we looked at Dima again..

Brown: Have you confroted him about that?

Dima: i wanted to have proof first.. Can't confrot him over a feeling..

I looked at my wrist watch..

Me: i think i should get going, Its late..

Dima: i thought we were still gonna watch this last movie...

Me: Tomorrow Cowen and i we going to his mother's house, there's an unveiling so we leaving early i think its best i have an early night.. We all should have an early night because you guys are coming too..

Brown stood up..

Him: Funi is right..

Dima: Well that's a bummer..

Dima and i also stood up then we all hugged each other and bid each other farewell...

Me: You want a lift Dima?

Her: No ill call Shabba

Me: Okay guys see you tomorrow..

They agreed.. They then walked Me to my new car that Cowen bought me was a Toyota Rav4...

[DIMA]

I called Shabba to come and fetch me, he didn't take that long..

After recieving a text from him that his waiting outside, hugged Brown then i went to Shabba who was waiting for me by the gate in his car...

Me: Hey..

He kissed me on my cheek.

Him: How was your night with the girls?

I shrugged my shoulders..

He started driving. Something was definitely not right with Shabba, the black clothes he wears the "Skull" sign. I feel like his hiding something from me..

He kept on stealing looks at me while he was driving..

Me: Yini? (what)

Him: Why u sour so?

Me: i don't know how to reply to that..

He kept quiet...

We stopped at caltex..

Him: Im gonna get some redbull, want something?

Me: a chocolate would be nice thank you..

Him: Okay im coming..

He got out, as he was walking to the entrance i took his phone..

I know snooping around is wrong but, i really wanna confrot him when i have proof...

He came back to the car after like 30sec,i put his phone back were i found it..

Me: That was quick...

Him: ng'khohlwe i bellas lami (i forgot my phone)

He took it...

Him: ngiyabuya (im coming back)...

He then looked at me..

Him: angik'thandi mowukwate so (i don't like you when you mad)

Me: Im not mad..

Him: Yeah whatever..

He squeezed my cheek and then went.. Shabba.. Shabba.. I hope he is straight with me..

PART 77 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:59] Ron: PART 78 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[DIMA]

I was at the flat, When i mean "the flat" i mean Shabba's flat...

My mom allows me to visit him on some weekends but doesn't want us moving in together until he pays Lobola..

His not even allowed to step foot in my house, he only drops me at the gate and that's that..

I was busy preparing Funi's wedding outfit, yes on tuesday she's getting married off which she doesn't even have an idea..

Tuesday Its her birthday, so Cowen decided that he wanna surprise her with a wedding at the rooftop, and we all out to make it a perfect night fit her.....

He has asked me to design her wedding outfit and im nervous because today Its Saturday and tuesday is just around the corner..

It was now around 1am,i have had my 3rd cup of Jacobs pure ground coffee i need to finish the sketch of this outfit so i could have it put it together for her at the factory or Cowen is gonna murder me..

It was a white Long tight skirt, with a white tshirt that has a gold lining..

Funi is a big girl so i have to get the measurements right and everything else.....

Shabba walked in on me after a while..

Shabba: How far along are you?

Me: almost there..

He sat on the chair and looked at me as i was busy sketching..

Me: You making it hard for me to concentrate you know?

He kept quiet and spoke after a few seconds...

Him: What's wrong kanti?

Me: Nothing Shabba i just wanna finish Funi's outfit before i go to bed.....

Him: Skat look at me..

I stopped what i was doing and looked at him..

Him: Talk to me,ngikwenzeni (talk to me)...

He gave me a desperate look in exchange for my honesty..

I put everything down and exhaled, how does one even begin to ask such....

Him: You don't want us to proceed with the Lobola?

I looked at him, how can he even think of that i love him and i wanna be with him..

Me: Why you say that?

Him: Because you not happy Skat, i mean ain't girls supposed to be happy when it comes to that?

I looked at him, he looked soo cute and desperate at the same time..

Him: i understand if you don't wanna go on with the negotiations im not gonna force you..

Me: Its not that Shabba..

Him: Then yini? (what is it)

I might as well just tell him the truth, if i can't be honest with him then who am i gonna be honest with?

Me: i just....

I looked at him and his eyes made me gain courage to confrot him..

Me: Shabba what is it that you do for a living? Why you always wearing black? What is the skull for?

He chuckled.. I didn't know that was amusing..

Him: That's whats been bothering you?

I nodded my head..

Him: Okay..

I swallowed hard, he looked like he was about to make a big confession..

Him: Let me put it in a way that you going to understand..

Me: Oookay..

He gave me a serious look..

Him: promise you won't tell anyone or leave me? because if you do then ill have to kill you..

I thought he was gonna say "im joking" but no he was serious..

I nodded..

Him: Promise?

Me: i.. Pro.. Promise..

Him: In lamest terms and not to confuse you.. I am a Gangster, and part of a crew called the Skulls.. Our crew is composed of doctors, lawyers, Cops etc.. We always look out for each other..

We are in each and every province, each province has a leader and our leader here is Cowen..

We professional thugs, we only rob banks that's why we this rich, and we only kill those who mean us harm..

After killing you we put a white cloth over you to symbolise purity, cleansing ourselves from your death.....

This is too much, I have never expected me and myself to be involved with such a dangerous person.. Ohh God what is my family gonna say?? What am i gonna say his profession is??

Him: Anything else?

I shook my head no..

Him: Dimzozo i love you Skat and ill never hurt you..

I could see in his eyes that he meant it.. So Funi is also dating a Gangster???

[FUNI]

Cowen came home at 2am. I was still up, i can't sleep without him being here..

He was very surprised to see me up....

What i hate about Cowen is that since he became a heart Surgeon he is always busy and hardly at home..

He was very tired i could tell, his eyes were even red and heavy..

I was wearing my short night dress..

Him: thought you'd be sleeping..

He said that while yawning...

Me: You know i can't sleep without you being here..

He took off his white coat and threw it on the couch then came up to me..

Him: Hard to resist caressing your big thighs in that sexy number..

He ran his hand up my thighs while i gave him a serious look..

Him: Something tells me that im in trouble..

Me: Why did you crash my girls night?

He gave me a confused look..

Me: Braga why did you force my girls to pressurise me about the baby thing?

Him: Ngizok'shaya you know you not supposed to call me Braga..

I kept quiet and looked at him..

Him: Im sorry bubu, i thought that maybe if it came from your friends you would actually give it a thought..

Cowen wants a baby and i hate that his pressurising me, im not ready....

Me: Cowen you know im not ready, please don't take me back there..

He kissed my hands..

Him: i know and im sorry..

Me: My.. Our baby was extracted from my womb in the most painful way, i see the scar everyday and it reminds me of what he... Did to me.

I looked at him with tears in my eyes..

Me: Are you gonna leave me if i refuse to give you a baby? I know how much you want your babies... He pulled me closer to him and hugged me tight while Whispering in my ear..

Him: Don't be crazy, baby or not ill always love you..

That's all i needed to know, him loving me

PART 78 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 13:59] Ron: PART 79 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[FUNI]

Unfortunately we didn't go to the unveiling, Cowen was very tired from the night before.. He told me that us not being there won't affect anyone because the relative was not even someone close to him.

I had to call Brown and Dima to cancel.....

It was around 8:55 and i was in my bra and matching underwear since we not going to the unveiling i decided to go to church..

I am very much connected to God now and i feel like i should always be grateful for the life i have now...

Cowen made his way in as i was busy choosing an outfit..

Only a few clothes fit me now, i was gaining weight drastically..

I felt him squeezing my butt and kissing me on my neck as i was in the closet going through my clothes...

Me: Cowen stop..

Him: How can i resist you when you this sexy?

Me: You can't even notice that im fat?

His hands made their way to my butt cheeks..

Him: Im not complaining because you gaining weight in all the right places....

Me: Stop it, im preparing for church..

Him: 5min..

Me: Im already late..

Him: 2min..

Me: as if like you would really go for 2 minutes?

Him: ill try

Me: Yeah then your 2min will be 15min..

He Exhaled and i felt his warm breath hitting my neck..

Me: Ain't you supposed to be sleeping? You tired remember?

One thing about Cowen is that, no matter how tired he is he will never sleep the whole day.. He always wakes up before me..

Him: Im not sleepy..

I could feel his hard shaft against my butt..

Me: Then go buy me a present for my birthday on tuesday..

I am excited about my Birthday On tuesday, i am mostly looking forward to the gifts im gonna

get. I have been hinting Cowen that i want a Mercedes-Benz GLA i hope he buys me..

His hands moved to my breasts and he squeezed them, he was Really turning me on..

Me: Cowen stop...

Him: Skip church for today..

Me: Just because you don't go to church, doesn't mean we all don't go...

He turned me around to face him..

Him: Do you still have the Morning after pill?

I nodded..

Him: Then that's good..

He lifted me up and i wrapped my legs around his waist while he balanced me on my butt so i don't fall..

For him to take all my weight, he was very strong..

He moved backwards until we made our way to the small couch just in the centre at the closest..

He sat down with me ontop of him and we were busy kissing...

He was running his hands on my back, while our tongues were dancing around...

We continued kissing, and him caressing me all over. I was already getting wet, everytime when Cowen touches me in a sexual way i get wet.....

He went to take off my bra, and i took off his Tank top..

Him: i love you soo much baby..

Me: i love you too..

In a matter of seconds we were naked, i was still ontop of him when he helped me Slide myself on him..

Everytime when he enters me it comes with a bit of pain..

I had my hands on his shoulders, and he had his hands on my waist..

Me: Ouch!!

Him: Painful?

Me: a little..

Him: Sorry..

I slowly took all of him in, and i could feel it deep inside..

Me: It we.. It went in too deep..

Him: We'll be done in no time..

He started kissing me while i went up and down on him...

After a few minutes he was holding my waist very tight and making me go up and down on him very fast... I felt him in deep which was a bit uncomfortable..

Me: Cowe..Cowen...

[DIMA]

I was at the kitchen drinking coffee..I couldn't even sleep last night after what Shabba told me..

I love Shabba and im not gonna leave him, im just wondering how we gonna work out and what am i gonna say to my family???

I have never dated a bad boy, i always dated sweet guys you know your typical "Boy next door" who were even scared of sex....

I really didn't know how our relationship was gonna work out, but i love him alot i mean this is the same guy who took my virginity...

I was brought back to reality when he put his arm around my neck and kissed me on my cheek..

He then whispered in my ear..

Him: Thinking too much is not good..

He then went to make himself coffee.

Him: How are you?

Me: Good and you?

I said that while yawning..

Him: What were you doing when some of us were sleeping?

I turned and looked at him..

Me: Just had a hectic night..

Him: Still bothered by what i told you last night?

I nodded my head..

Me: ive never dated a bad boy before..

He chuckled..

Me: Im wondering how we gonna work out..

Him: i told you that im never gonna hurt you..

Me: But if i leave you then you will?

He kept quiet..

Me: Sorry that came out wrong..

Him: Its ayt..

I kept quiet and sipped on my coffee..

Him: Do you know what other things that bad boys are good at?

I looked at him..

Me: no..

Him: wanna know?

Me: if it's not dangerous

He put his mug down then came to me and kissed me.....

Him: That..

We continued kissing and he picked me up and put me ontop of the kitchen counter, and came in between my legs, while we were still busy kissing.....

PART 79 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 14:01] Ron: PART 80 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[DIMA]

Tuesday came, it was Funi's birthday and surprise wedding..

Everything was to be set up at the rooftop before she gets back from work, and if everything is not yet set i am suppose to keep her busy.....

I had finished with her outfit, i even sent the sketches to the factory personal and fetched it too when it was ready.....

I hope she likes it, but most of all i hope it fits her especially because now she has wider curves....

I was nervous as if like im the one getting married in a few hours time...

Cowen is gonna be here in no time to fetch the outfit..

Me: Her outfit is done, i hope she likes it...

I was breathing in and out...

Shabba laughed, i looked at him..

Me: Im glad that you finding this funny..

Him: Why are you this nervous again?

Me: Excuse me?

Him: No excuse you.. Dima you did everything you could, you even went an extra mile. If this doesn't work out then Its not your fault.. Plus how do we know that Funi is even gonna be happy about all this surprise wedding?

Me: You right about that. I feel like Cowen should've maybe gave a little thought into all of this.. A wedding is not what you surprise someone with..

Him: Exactly, what you should be worrying about is your Lobola negotiations on Saturday..

Me: And then there's that..

My Lobola negotiations are on Saturday i am also nervous about that...

Me: i feel soo much stress i don't know if ill be able to keep up..

We then heard the door bell..

Shabba: must be Cowen...

He stood up and went to open, indeed it was Cowen....

Cowen: Morning guys..

We greeted him back..

Me: Her outfit is on the couch..

He went and got it...

Him: Thank you very much.

Shabba: Does she have a slight clue about all of this?

Cowen: naa she's not suspecting anything...

Me: Then that's good..

Cowen: 18:00 at the rooftop...

Shabba: We'll be there

Cowen: Don't be late too..

Shabba: Never..

He then looked at me...

Him: Thank you very much, i owe you big time..

Me: You welcome..

He then walked out..

Me: Let me go get my things.. After the whole ceremony is done can you please drive me home?

He looked at me..

Him: is my flat boring?

Me: No i need to go home my mom wants me home so we can also start preparing for the negotiations...

He raised his hands up as if like he was surrendering..

Me: Let me go get my things then..

Him: Okay

I went to get my things..

[FUNI]

I was done preparing for work, i kept on checking my phone hoping to get a text or phone call from Cowen wishing me a happy birthday, but nothing....

My heart was very sore i won't lie, Shabba had wished me a happy birthday, Dima had wished me a happy birthday too.. so did Brown, even my Cousin Jozi called and Cowen forgot...

I took my phone and called him...

Him: Bubu

Me: Hey honey..

Him: Are you alright?

Me: Yes..

Him: Then that's good to hear..

Me: uhm Cowen..

Him: Yes?

Me: aren't you forgetting something?

Him: Something like?

Me: i don't know was hoping that maybe you would wanna tell me something?

Him: Ohw yaa your results came back you not pregnant....I think you gaining weight Because you eating alot of unhealthy food..

Me: Ohw.

Him: Yeap.. Aren't you at the boutique?

Me: Was on my way there..

Him: Okay have a lovely day, and i love you..

Me: me too..

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

I hunged up.. That was a thorn to my heart.....

...

My day at the boutique was very slow and not interesting, or maybe is it because i was still mad that Cowen forgot my birthday..

I have been hinting him about the Mercedes-Benz the whole of last week but still.....

I was relieved when the clock struck 17:00, i can go home and sleep my broken heart away...

Dima came to my office as i was packing my things....

Her: boss lady.

I looked at her..

Her: Don't you wanna go out, get Ice cream or something i mean Its your birthday after all..

Me: Thank you, but no..

Him: Are you still mad that he forgot your birthday?

Me: You damn right i am.. How could he?

Her: Then that's why you should drown your sorrows in ice cream..

I looked at her..

Me: Well maybe you right, lets go..

She smiled at me and we went....

We didn't take that long at the mall, we just got ice creams and did a bit of window shopping until we got bored and went to my place....

Dima was wearing a beautiful gold&white dress like she's going to attend some important function...

The house was quiet when we got in, Cowen is definitely not back..

Me: Let me go put my things upstairs...

Her: ill just hang around down here.

Me: Okay..

I walked upstairs to my bedroom, and what i saw when i got there really shocked me..

A beautiful gold&white outfit was laid out on the bed with gold heels and a note...

I went to get the note and it read:

"We met in the most strange way ever, you were just a mere patient of mine and i was your doctor. Never in a million years did i think that today ill have the courage to make you my wife. I love you, and i wanna spend the rest of my life with you. Ive lost you many times before, and today i wanna keep you forever.. All im Saying Funi Mahlangu is, would you please marry me? Put on the outfit and come at the rooftop, if you not here in an hour then ill know that your answer is no..

And before i forget lift up the pillow"..

I lifted up the pillow and i saw Car keys, Mercedes-Benz car keys to be Exact with a small ribbon wrapped around them written "happy birthday"...

I was very shocked, i didn't know what to do or think at that point.

What is Cowen thinking? This is something that we should've discussed first...

[COWEN]

I was waiting at the rooftop, the place was decorated gold&white.

Our close family and friends were there, my mom was there even her cousin Jozi was there...

Time had went and Funi was not showing up.....

For the first time in my life i was scared maybe i crossed the line, i should've discussed this with her first...

Everyone was starting to get a bit worried...

Dima walked in to take her seat and i looked at her, she then shook her head and mumbled the words "Sorry"...

My heart sank, i really thought that Funi was gonna accept my proposal..

I turned and looked at the Pastor...

Me: Uhm i am very sorry about what's happening.. I really thought that..

I felt Shabba poking me on my shoulder..I looked at him...

Me: Wait man im still..

Him: Look at the emergency door..

I turned and looked at the door and there she was making her way to me and looking beautiful as ever...

Everyone stood up....

She looked very beautiful and perfect. When she had made her way to me everyone sat down...

She looked at me,with a serious face i knew that deep down she wanted to kill me...

Me: i have a funeral cover..

Her: You better.....

After a few seconds she smiled at me and i smiled at her too....

I was very glad that tonight she is going to be MRS SEAN COWEN..

PART 80 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[04/15, 14:02] Ron: PART 81 SAVE ME FROM MY INLAWS

[2 YEARS LATER]

I am in my hotel room sitting on the bed about to video call Mama k...

Cowen and i made this to Durban because Dima and Shabba are getting married tomorrow..

They Have done pretty well for themselves, they have a house and she's 4 months pregnant..

The reason why it took this long for them to get married, is that Dima's family tried to break them up after finding out that Shabba is a Skull. It was the lowest point in Dima's life because no matter how much she tried to convince her family how happy she is with Shabba, they just didn't wanna hear none of that and they disowned her. She couldn't handle the news very well that she got severe depression..

It took her a while to put together the broken pieces of her psychiatry...After that whole experience when she recovered decided to plan their wedding and here we are today.....

Dima and Shabba love each other, i didn't know that Shabba can actually love someone...

Before i made the call, i stood up and went to look at the scar in my abdominal area but this time around my attitude towards it had changed. I am looking at it not thinking about what Zuko once did to me, but thinking about the two humans beings that came from there...

2 months ago i gave birth to twin boys Sean Cowen jnr, and Sade Cowen.....

It was not a planned pregnancy, what had happened is that..Cowen and i went to the Bahamas for our anniversary and we did the deed unfortunately i couldn't get any morning after pill there so that's how my boys were conceived...

I went and took my phone then video called Mama k...

Her: Miss cover page, i thought you'll be attending your friend's bridal shower?

Me: Im about to go, just wanted to see my boys i miss them...

Her: Its only been 2 days, you have already called us 50 times..

Now she's exaggerating...

Me: i know, i just miss them alot..

Her: They sleeping..

Me: Can i see them?

She turned her phone and they were sleeping peacefully... I watched them with tears in my eyes..

Her: haibo Funi..

Me: You just don't understand how much i miss them..

The door opened as i was speaking to Mama k, and Cowen walked in...

Him: Shabba and D..

He looked at me with disapproval..

Me: i just miss them Okay?

Him: This is the 50th time you called home..

He came to sit next to me..

Cowen: ubulawa yi separation anxiety mama ungamunaki..

He took my phone and cancelled the video call...

Him: every second you get you always separating yourself from us and calling home.. Your friend needs you she's a nervous wreck..

Me: Maybe i have been a bit selfish..

Him: You have..

I stood up..

Me: Let's go..

Him: Not yet.. Bad girls deserve to be punished..

He pulled me to him and i fell on the bed with him coming ontop of me...

Him: How did we get here?

Me: G5..

Him: No i mean we married and we have twins, how did we get to have this perfect life?

Me: Just blessings on blessings..

He smiled and kissed me...

...

I came very far for me to have this life. When i had given up on ever finding happiness and peace in my life, someone never gave up on me instead he saved me from my in laws being Zuko and his family...

I used to cry when i go down memory lane, but now i smile when i go down memory lane because if Zuko didn't bash me with his gun that night, then i wouldn't have met DR Cowen...

Sometimes painful experiences are actually stepping stones to a brighter future, never in your life view a painful experience as a curse..

Thank you to everyone who took their time to read my story.

.

I AM FUNI COWEN, AND THIS WAS MY STORY

*****THE END*****